

The “Facing Fear’... Raise Up Love” series of WUR shows from November 15, 2015 to April 3, 2016... or: “What more can we do to ensure that “Love RULES” – (Dft 224)

These “Facing Fear... Raise Up Love...” shows continue our focus on 'occupying' – consciously... with intention – this transition to freedom by: establishing 'safe' places to plan and express our love: places for the cultivation of soul-sufficiency... which necessarily means: helping each other get 'big' – the process of reclaiming... sharing... and expanding our original 'selves'... as we begin organizing the 'transition'... (Parts 31 – 43)... or... “Facing Fear... Raise Up Love...” (Parts 1 – 15)

The November 15, 2015 show – themes and things: “Fleshing out the picture of our alternative global arrangement – our 'opposite' to 'class'...” and... “seeing hidden-'power' within and without: lessons from Alice”... and that... “our successful strategy for getting free must have an ethical basis...” (“Love RULES [“Raise Up Love Evolution” shows] Part 1... pages 3 – 9)

The November 22, 2015 show – themes and things: “Moving through the impediments to conscious planning...” and... “What are the tactics by which we know 'power's presence?...” “What changed in the 'certainty-disproportion dynamics' (between we-the-people... and the global-state-statesmen...) in the period post-French Revolution?...” and... “Why must we see hidden-'power' in order to root our actions in an ethical basis?...” and... “'class' means targeting the vulnerable: lessons from Alice...” “How do we know there is 'suppression' of thought... is there not critical discussion?...” (“Love RULES” Part 2... pages 10 – 14)

The November 29, 2015 show – themes and things: “We need certainty to create a process for developing our vision of a global alternative based in non-coercion and the self-development of our gifts...” and... “continuous harassment (bills... taxes... poisoned environment... constant surveillance... and secret weapons used against us... – for if you worry an animal continuously... how can it challenge you...) is the basic m.o. of 'power' at whatever point we intersect with it...” and that... “when you vest a vision on the children... it gets advanced... whether that vision is born of hate or love... they will try to get it done... Let's support the 'love'... It is urgent.” (“Love RULES” Part 3... pages 14 – 22)

The December 6, 2015 show – themes and things: “what is a healthy 'tribalism'?... and how do we use it to combat... the destructive notion (destructive of our earlier rich diversity... and which we are recomposing... in forming 'open tribes'... 'associations'...) to combat the destructive notion of 'class'... and build certainty that 'happiness' requires the individual self-sufficiency of each one of us globally...” and that we are... “working together to 'pursue this happiness'... which is our codified right here in the U.S. – granting us the ability and responsibility to initiate a global movement to end the 'class'-system ('rule by the few'...) – in doing this we become 'associated mobilizations inaugurating the realization of our right of happiness'... i.e.... “we model it... we make it” – the honest flip of 'power's falseness...” and... “how can our associations reinforce 'certainty'?...” (“Love RULES” Part 4... pages 22 – 28)

The December 13, 2015 show – themes and things: “...training in obedience silences the authentic 'self'...” or: “the implications of the equation: 'utilitarianism = dualism = a might-makes-right ethics = obedience training = the soul's expression replaced by performance = wounding of the authentic self...' – the implications of the generalized (under 'class') imposition of this training for our global-society planning process...” and... “seeing the structure of our global arrangement based in non-coercion and the self-development of our gifts...” and... “redesigning our interior infrastructure...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 5... pages 29 – 38)

The December 20, 2015 show – themes and things: “...reconceiving our 'economic' allegiance...” and... “...redefining 'Progress'...” and... “...owning our own spontaneous feelings...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 6... pages 39 – 46)

The December 27, 2015 show – themes and things: “...recovering the power of 'the individual'... both societally and personally... i.e. how to help ourselves and our Brothers and Sisters recover the authentic self... the suppressed feelings denied us as children: our capacity to feel spontaneously – and... can this be accomplished through acts of consciousness... the development of authentic thought?...” and... “...what does it mean to 'de-commission the system'?...” and... “what is the connection between recovering our lost 'selves'...owning our own spontaneous feelings... and 'de-commissioning the system'? ...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 7... pages 47 – 52)

The January 3, 2016 show – themes and things: Continues and develops our themes from last week: “...recovering the authentic self in order to develop the power of 'the individual'... both societally and personally...” and... “is it possible to recover feelings suppressed as children – our capacity to feel spontaneously – by developing our thought?... and if so how would we begin to do this?...” to answer which means we must ask... “what causes... most essentially... feelings to freeze?...” and... “is Proudhon right that new ideas could deliver us from the trap of the false notions of the past... and if so... by what process would this happen?... and... “what 'de-commissions' 'the system'?...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 8... pages 53 – 59)

The January 10, 2016 show – themes and things: Continues and develops our themes from last week: “...what new ideas could deliver us from the trap of the false notions of 'class'... and if there are thoughts or ideas that can do this... what are they... and by what process would this happen?... and... “what 'de-commissions' 'the system'?...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 9... pages 59 – 65)

The January 17, 2016 show – themes and things: “What thoughts and practices could deliver us from the trap of the false notions of 'class'... and by what process would this happen?...” in which discussion we will... “revisit concepts (from our May 17, 2015 show...) one being the necessary role (in our process of reacquisition of the 'authentic self...') of the 'emphatic partner'... and the other being “the trauma of 'class'”... We'll consider what these concepts mean for our building that critical mass of committed folk working to 'de-commission the global-system...” and... “given that our conditioning is (in a sense...) the 'whole of it'... the whole of the matter of our containment (under 'class'...) and given that the gaps between *our* 'understanding-of-what-is-happening'... and *power's*... and between *our* 'certainty' – our confidence in ourselves and our belief in our right to our unhindered movement in the world – and *power's* – as 'power' has established a grossly disproportionate 'advantage' in technological... military... and psychological means... as well as an extreme gap ethically... – i.e.... given our absolute dependence... we ever exist in a condition of extreme risk of being harmed in their arbitrary process... euphemistically known as 'management' of us and the planet (all of these being... essentially... gaps between our sense of *our* capabilities and the off-the-charts-hubris of 'power'...)” So... “how do we address these disproportions?... what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 10... pages 66 – 72)

The January 24, 2016 show – themes and things: Continues themes we've been developing: “What thoughts and practices could deliver us from the trap of the false notions of 'class'... what are the questions that could initiate these discussions?...” and... “what 'all' is involved in regaining our 'selves': breaking out of the mindset of 'service'...” and... “making 'power's' implied 'management-right' over us subject to discussion...” and... “shouldn't there be an 'honesty-right-of-life' that supersedes the 'right-of-rule'?” and... “Breaking out of the Panopticon globally – working together across nation to: develop our anti-coercion positions and pledge... design and implement our self-management practices... and build alliances for challenging the management-right of states...” and: “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 11... pages 72 – 78)

The January 31, 2016 show – themes and things: Continues themes we've been developing: “What does it mean to integrate our experience of the abusiveness of 'class' into our personalities?...” and... “particularly given the disintegration of the global-coerced-work-system... and 'power's inevitable hidden machinations in response... what would a wholistic 'Self-defense education look like that would address our (we-the-people's) lack of autonomy and our vulnerability to 'power's attempts to divide us?...” and... “can this be done while forming ourselves into 'a people' demanding the right to pursue happiness?... both as 'a people'... and as fully developing individualities...” and... “how can we implement our anti-coercion commitments to our children in the school system?...” and... “how do we begin to develop our 'global-focus-of-the-alternative' commitment?...” and: “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 12... pages 78 – 85)

The February 7, 2016 show – themes and things: The 'Cronian'-propensity of states... with the additional element of almost-complete planetary non-renewable 'resource'-depletion (i.e.... 'the system' can't generate enough 'jobs' for the global population...)” and... “what would a wholistic 'Self-defense education look like that would address our (we-the-people's) lack of autonomy and our vulnerability to 'power's attempts to divide us?...” and... “forming ourselves into 'a people' demanding the right to pursue happiness... both as 'a people'... and as fully developing individualities...” and... “implementing our anti-coercion commitments to our children ...” and... “how do we begin to develop our 'global-focus-of-the-alternative' commitment?...” and: “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 13... pages 84 – 92)

The February 14, 2016 show – themes and things: “The importance of 'the right story'...” and... “What would a wholistic 'Self-defense education look like that would address our (we-the-people's) lack of autonomy and our vulnerability to 'power's attempts to divide us?...” and... “First steps toward forming ourselves into 'a people' demanding the right to pursue happiness... both as 'a people'... and as fully developing individualities...” and... “Seeing reality...” and... as always...: “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 14... pages 92 – 99)

The February 21, 2016 show – themes and things: “All the elements of 'power's control of us hinge on its continuously re-created falseness...” and... “War is always war on us... whether they blow us up with guns or markets... or with hidden weaponry used clandestinely...” and... “The importance of 'the right story' within a wholistic 'Self-defense practice: first steps toward forming ourselves into 'a people' demanding the right to pursue happiness... both as 'a people'... and as fully developing individualities...” and... “Seeing reality: using our full gifts puts us at risk...” and... as always...: “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 15... pages 99 – 106)

The February 28, 2016 show – themes and things: “‘Outing hidden-'power': addressing 'power's use of hidden weaponry...” and... “Continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice... for forming ourselves into 'a people' (as fully-developing-individualities...) that believes in our right to happiness... must do – our effective model must: start with 'the right story'... let the body speak... address all the weapons and tactics stacked against it...” and... “Seeing reality: 'love rules' our need to be strategic as well as the principle of utility we apply in our work...” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 16... pages 106 – 112)

The March 6, 2016 show – themes and things: “The content of 'wholistic self-defense... continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice... for forming ourselves into 'a people' (as fully-developing-individualities...) that believes in our right to happiness... must do – our effective model must (among other things...: start with 'the right story'... let the body speak... address all the weapons and tactics stacked against it... discuss 'freedom or forgiveness through mourning'... 'integrating the trauma of 'class' into our personalities'... 'being the emphatic partner'... as well as... 'something to defend: the truth...' then... seeing reality: that only by our being the emphatic partner can we end 'power's cycle of repetition... and... seeing the reality that: 'love rules' our need to be strategic as well as the

principle of utility we apply in our work...” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 17... pages 113 – 120)

The March 13, 2016 show – themes and things: “The content of 'wholistic self-defense – continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice... must do... for forming ourselves into 'a people' (as fully-developing-individualities...) that believes in our right to happiness: identifying our five key components...” and... “exploring the connections between the crafted falseness 'politics'... the crafted falseness 'economics'... and our designed absence of empathy for each other...” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 18... pages 120 – 123)

The March 20, 2016 show – themes and things: “It is impossible to understand that which we try to 'understand': 'the state'...” and... “continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance must be – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice – to form ourselves into 'a people' that believes in our right to happiness'...” and... “making the coercion of 'class' conscious...” and... “exploring the connections between the crafted falseness 'politics'... the crafted falseness 'economics'... and our designed absence of empathy for each other (continued...)” and... “hardening'... 'tempering'... our associations... through the recognition of our common collaboration with 'power' (under 'class'...) that 'coercion' is the common denominator of all 'class'-trauma... a trauma from which none are exempt...” and... “building capacity to support our reconstituted wholeness (empathy... unity...): the importance of our ethical stance in the face of 'power's sole obsession: 'to win' (continued...)” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 19... pages 124 – 129)

The March 27, 2016 show – themes and things: “The Tiny Ten rule us by means of psychological mechanisms...” – does this statement surprise us?...” and... “making the coercion of 'class' conscious...” and... “exploring the connections between the crafted falseness 'politics'... the crafted falseness 'economics' (proposing our authentic definition of 'the economy'... which includes the “ATM Machine”...) and our designed absence of empathy for each other (the crafted falseness 'child-rearing'...)” and... “hardening'... 'tempering'... our associations... through the recognition of our common collaboration with 'power' (under 'class'...) that 'coercion' is the common denominator of all 'class'-trauma... a trauma from which none are exempt...” and... “building capacity: the importance of our ethical stance in the face of 'power's sole obsession: 'to win' – utilitarian ethics (continued...)” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” – also: an email sent informed that there have been interruptions of the Internet stream... and I fully expect there will be one when we discuss the “ATM Machine...” (Part 20... pages 129 –136)

The April 3, 2016 show – themes and things: “Facing our greatness – we are the wealth we've been waiting for: continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance must be – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice – that will form us into 'a people' that believes in our right to happiness'...” and... “making the coercion of 'class' conscious...” and... “exploring the connections between the crafted falseness 'politics'... the crafted falseness 'economics'... and our designed absence of empathy for each other (the crafted falseness 'child-rearing'...)” and... “hardening'... 'tempering'... our associations... through the recognition of our common collaboration with 'power' (under 'class'...) that 'coercion' is the common denominator of all 'class'-trauma... a trauma from which none are exempt...” and... “building capacity to support our reconstituted wholeness (empathy... unity...): the importance of our ethical stance in the face of 'power's sole obsession: 'to win' – utilitarian ethics (continued...)” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES”...” (Part 21... pages 137 – 143)

The November 15, 2015 show – themes and things: “Fleshing out the picture of our alternative global arrangement – our 'opposite' to 'class'...” and... “seeing hidden-'power' within and without: lessons from Alice”... and that... “our successful strategy for getting free must have an ethical basis...” (“Love RULES [“Raise Up Love Evolution” shows] Part 1... pages 3 – 8)

[“151115raiseuplove_1.mp3”:]

November 12, 2015... Sisters and Brothers: I beg your patience while I ponder how best to continue posting (in both pdf and html form...) text and audio for these shows... now that my attempts to add text and audio to the “3.7” page have been blocked.) You recall I wrote about the 'jog circuit' in the first chapter of *Waking Up*... well... this is a good illustration of it. 'Power' likes to break our flows when we got a good one going... and I think we do with this “Embracing Global Goals 3.7” page. Where I'm leaning as I write this (on the 13th) is to leave the unread reading in “3.7” 'temporarily' in limbo... with the exception of 'Alice'. This will mean... when we return to the “3.7” page... that I will be reading her for the second time... but she well deserves extra time. I won't be typing up any additional of her words for the pdfs until I can also post them to their page with their accompanying audio. [I changed my mind on this.] So... for now... I'll write and type up the commentary portion of each subsequent show as a single pdf... such that the result... in conjunction with the “3.7” shows... might serve as practical guidance for working with our Brothers and Sisters... The 'reading' section in this (present) document – all that I've typed so far – will remain intact in this pdf... but I'll be transferring the commentary section to this new pdf... which... borrowing from Coleen the title of her song... I'll call “Facing Fear... Raise Up Love...” The audio from these 'Facing Fear' shows I'll post both on the “Missing Audio” page... as well as on a new page I've set up titled: “Facing Fear... Raise Up Love: the Audio-Files for the November 15, 2015 show and beyond.”

Looking over the shows the “3.7” page holds – beginning with the August 23, 2015 show up to the opening of this November 15, 2015 show... which includes the text for our Marx... Wallerstein... and Alice Miller readings – it strikes me that the progression of the analysis is definitive and merits revisiting. For instance... the themes of today's show: “fleshing out the picture of our alternative global arrangement – our 'opposite' to 'class'...” and... “seeing hidden-'power' within and without...” and that “our successful strategy for getting free must have an ethical basis...” were also the themes of our August 23, 2015 show. So today we will be deepening our understanding of these themes... and seeing how it is they necessarily interweave.

[“151115raiseuplove_2.mp3”:]

[And... to reiterate a personal request... it sure would be a big 'assist'... if I had a way to upload without putting my life at risk... Here's the pattern: I venture out pre-3-AM and journey to my upload spot... cars with pointing headlights identify the road for the coming drone... I start my upload tasks... and soon overhead the drone passes... I get blasted... I know because my body starts to swell (though I feel it most in my knees... chest... and head...) then either it... or some other one... hovers off at a distance... and plays “Man in the middle” for all my 'url' requests (I know because there have been a few glitches...) it seems when I think I'm uploading... they're intercepting it... who knows why... or what they do with (to) it... but it sure would be sweet to have an upload-alternative...]

[“151115raiseuplove_3.mp3”:]

November 10, 2015... Sisters and Brothers: I admit to a dream... I don't mean our free future... for that is certainty... each one of us becoming 'big' ends this system... withers 'the state in us...'

...no... the dream I see is all of us singing... “Facing fear... raise up love...” a song written by Sifu Coleen Gragen... the martial arts teacher who has been coming up for me of late. When my son mentioned that one of her students... Kate Hobbs – a woman who is one of my son's teachers – sang a song that Coleen used to sing a lot at demonstrations around the time she founded Hand to Hand Martial Arts Center in Oakland, California... I wanted to hear it... so I went to see Kate with my recorder and she was kind enough to let me record her singing it... the one verse she's committed to memory:

Facing fear... raise up love... raise up love...
Facing fear... raise up love...
Raise up love for women and children...
Raise up love for the homeless and the poor...
Raise up love for human rights...
...for all people...
Raise up love... put an end to war...

Facing fear... raise up love... raise up love...
Facing fear... raise up love...

Here is the recording of Kate Hobbs singing Coleen's song... followed by the beat my son made of it:

["151105katesingsraiseup_edit.mp3": "Facing fear... raise up love... raise up love... Facing fear... raise up love... Raise up love for women and children... Raise up love for the homeless and the poor... Raise up love for human rights... for all people... Raise up love... put an end to war... Facing fear... raise up love... raise up love... Facing fear... raise up love..." (Kate Hobbs singing "Raise Up Love", recorded at her home on November 5, 2015)]

Here is the beat my son made of Kate singing Coleen's song:

["raiseuplove.mp3": "Facing fear... raise up love... raise up love... Facing fear... raise up love..." (Thandiwe's word-beat of Kate singing Coleen's song, posted to the "Blog" page and to the November 15, 2015 *Waking Up Radio* show on the "3.7" page.)]

["151115ourglobalprize_4.mp3":]

When Peter Kropotkin... toward the end of his essay "Law and Authority"... debunks the case made (by 'power' across the ages of 'class'...) for the need for 'criminal law' (the protection racket coterminous with its beginnings: they create the hardship... then blame us for it...):

The third category of law still remains to be considered; that relating to the protection of the person and the detection and prevention of "crime." This is the most important because most prejudices attach to it; because, if law enjoys a certain amount of consideration, it is in consequence of the belief that this species of law is absolutely indispensable to the maintenance of security in our societies. These are laws developed from the nucleus of customs useful to human communities, which have been turned to account by rulers to sanctify their own domination. The authority of the chiefs of tribes, of rich families in towns, and of the king, depended upon their judicial functions, and even down to the present day, whenever the necessity of government is spoken of, its function as supreme judge is the thing implied. "Without a government men would tear one another to pieces," argues the village orator. "The ultimate end of all government is to secure twelve honest jurymen to every accused person," said Burke.

Well, in spite of all the prejudices existing on this subject, it is quite time that anarchists should boldly declare this category of laws as useless and injurious as the preceding ones...

...one of the points he makes is that those who argue that we need the state... to provide the restraint of the 'barbarians' among us... always assume 'class'... *ad infinitum*... never admit into our view a picture of "a society in which a man will receive a better education, in which the development of all his faculties, and the possibility of exercising them, will procure him so many enjoyments that he will not seek to poison them by remorse..."

...the suppressed speech he is identifying: the picture of our new world founded on the opposite (to 'class') operating premises of non-coercion... mutual aid... decentralization... limitless time... freedom from necessity... no hierarchy... fully-developing individualities... and the fulfillment of collective aims through our cooperative associations...

...this suppression of the discussion of the obvious alternative is a fraud located so centrally in the web of lies 'power' spins to ensnare us... that it may be the best way in... to begin breaking the spell... to help ourselves out of the trance of 'class'... begin the erosion of the belief in 'rule'... 'hierarchy'... and the supposed 'necessity' of the forfeiture of our unique earth-given gifts...

Among the myths exposed in our discussions of 'the alternative' are: the myth of 'progress'... the notion that we are 'workers' (i.e. servants of a 'system' of 'power'...) that we are the source of the problems that plague us (as opposed to 'hidden' 'power'... the global-state-statesmen...) that 'the state' is 'out there' instead of in us... that 'class' is 'inevitable' and so we must accept it... that the planning frame is the nation-state... that the definitions we are handed are the ones we must take:

'freedom' being life outside an actual prison cell... 'happiness' a transitory condition that shifts with the mood we happen to be in... that 'leadership' qualities are scarce commodities... and 'decision-making' must be held in few hands as a monopoly.

The process of naming the qualities we need to be healthy living things... in conjunction with the discussion of the dis-ease of the world we see around us... the world 'power' has made – it's wastefulness... destructiveness... contempt for us... irreverence... – necessarily calls into question the motives of 'statesmen'... exposes their opposite destination for us... the fact that they have an opposite 'vision'.

It's particularly urgent that we begin to claim this turf of 'the world we want' given the speed with which 'power' is rushing to con us back into our boxes... at the very moment when more and more of us are determined to get out of them... and the scales have tipped toward our freedom. 'Power' cannot provide the 'jobs' globally and we are beginning to see that other option called 'freedom' – defined by us as 'freedom from necessity... and so freedom to grow our gifts limitlessly' – opening up before us... thanks to our intercommunications globally... and the recognition of the power of the technology we have created. It's up to us now to flesh out that picture of 'freedom' with our Brothers and Sisters... continuously extend the results of those discussions to others... and begin organizing the transition – the key elements of which we've been discussing.

It's important that we have a standard by which to judge the 'deals' 'power' advances to attempt to con us... yet again. Kropotkin's point that the obvious alternative of 'health' – to oppose to the intentionally sown (by 'power') mistrust-laden shortages and divisions... the poison of imposed hardship infecting our relations... – is never mentioned when 'power' rolls out one of its 'deals'... can be seen in all 'power's' propaganda campaigns. One such was discussed in a recent *East Bay Express*:

He [John Curl... a chronicler of cooperatives] said he thinks we have reached a turning point, in which “the larger economic structures are no longer providing for people, and people are inventing their own structures.” This has been the context both for a resurgence in cooperatives and the new platforms of the sharing economy; people have turned to both when the traditional economy fails to meet their needs.... [One example is] the platform-based sharing [model... which serves as an exchange connecting services with customers and] does not collect a commission on each service, so there would be no mark-up.... [This] kind of business... has a small band of proponents across the country who have named it “platform cooperativism.” Earlier this year, [Janelle] Orsi [a 'sharing economy' lawyer] wrote in an article for *The Nation*, “We have a choice: Keep using platforms that widen the wealth gap, or build tech platforms as commons.” (Zoe Oja Tucker, “The True Sharing Economy”, *East Bay Express*, November 4 – 10, 2015)

The 'power'-guys who orchestrate campaigns like this intend for us to think as we read it: “So... this is a structural shift we're seeing... but it could be a good thing... potentially... if we stretch our skills and use our gifts... unlike with that 'nine-to-five'-oppressiveness... We could by default make a whole new economy!... even a new world perhaps... in the wake of 'capitalism's' waning influence... just by everyone seizing the opening... venturing into the gap... and growing into it!”

What's wrong with that?

How do we reply without our vision in mind?

—

[“151115infinitehubris_5.mp3”:]

'Power' justifies itself with the myth that it provides 'Progress'...

...no person of careful observation could believe this myth for a second... of the waste of our lives... and all the earth's resources... the spoliation of the planet... the evidence is abundant...

In reality... the only case for 'progress' this evidence makes... is 'power's' 'progress' 'in hardening our chains... This train's in motion... and it's got a speed to it... with our global human energy providing the fuel for it... and Plato serving the 'statesmen' as guide... to a future in which we're just... as usual... along for the ride... and to pay the price... with the loss of our gifts... of their bottomless arrogance... and their infinite hubris.

—

["151115thechiefdifficulty_6.mp3":]

"Reflections of '3.7': the August 23, 2015 Show":

The difficulty facing us... we who are determined to get our freedom... is that the difficulty facing us has been intentionally misidentified throughout the course of our lives...

We live our lives enshrouded in fog... a thick set of blankets... that 'power' layers on us... causing us to sleep... and binding our hands when we seek... to fight our way out of it...

What is this fog?... that we are 'workers'... and that there are no conscious actors... a tiny few... whose sole purpose is to keep us believing that the function assigned us by 'the market'... has legitimacy... and serves the collective purpose... of the larger society...

And what are they concealing with this fog?

...that they know what they want – that they have a vision... and that they are steadily guiding our feet to it...

...and how do we know this?... because only by knowing what they want can they prevent our thought from latching on the obvious...

And how do we know they exist?... this tiny few?... because the critical... seminal... thinking denied us... is so obvious... that only conscious intent could keep it from us...

What is this 'thinking'?...

...that we are trained to obey... that this 'work' the parent does for the state... out of a misguided hope that doing so will help their children to be 'successful'...

...that a clear picture of an alternative to a society premised on force and obedience exists...

...that we are prevented from discussing it... by vetting 'education'... and by vetting the media... and by structuring the world to keep us separate... never knowing each other's lives...

...that we ourselves... we who are determined to get our freedom... manifest 'the system'... when we fail to address... the 'state-in-us'... that 'state' first implanted by the parent... and later on by 'education'...

...that our successful strategy to achieve our freedom comes from an ethical stance... not 'science'...

...but to achieve the ethical stance for our freedom... necessarily means seeing that these tiny few act consciously... in concert... and in secret...

...that these 'tiny few' are newly-minted... that the 'nation-state' is their invention... achieved in the aftermath of the French Revolution...

...and it means seeing that the tactic of 'hiding' is much more savvy (from the perspective of 'power'...) than what first strikes the eye...

...as it means that the difficulty facing us... is kept intentionally from us... throughout the course of our lives...

—

["151115unconsciousdamage_7.mp3":]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

Turning to Alice Miller... We are reading Alice for at least three things: to see how 'the state' gets made in us... to see the deep conditioning of the Plato's tribesmen... when they were children... and to hear what suggestions Alice has... for 'de-conditioning' ourselves – dismantling 'the state-within' – breaking free of the trance...

—

["151115alicemillerpt1_8.mp3":]

["151115alicemillerpt2_9.mp3":]

["151115alicessummary_10.mp3":]

These 'power'-mad Few eliminate anyone they want on a whim... [the current state of things is hideous... we could not be in more need of Alice... Notice the close correspondence between what was done to them... and their stance toward us...]:

These passages teach us that:

1. Adults are the masters (not the servants!) of the dependent child.
2. They determine in godlike fashion what is right and what is wrong.
3. The child is responsible for [the parent's] anger.
4. The parents must always be shielded.
5. The child's life-affirming feelings pose a threat to the autocratic adult.
6. The child's will must be "broken" as soon as possible.
7. All this must happen at a very early age, so the child "won't notice" and will therefore not be able to expose the adults.

—

["151115aliceexposesliespowertells_11.mp3":]

Further...

It is also a part of "poisonous pedagogy" to impart to the child from the beginning false information and beliefs that have been passed on from generation to generation and dutifully accepted by the young even though they are not only unproven but are demonstrably false. [We could add to this list: "...that you are part of a superior 'master race'... destined to become 'philosopher-king-statesmen'..." – P.S.] Examples of such beliefs are:

1. A feeling of duty produces love.
2. Hatred can be done away with by forbidding it.
3. Parents deserve respect simply because they are parents.
4. Children are undeserving of respect simply because they are children
5. Obedience makes a child strong.
6. A high degree of self-esteem is harmful.
7. A low degree of self-esteem makes a person altruistic.
8. Tenderness (doting) is harmful.

9. Responding to a child's needs is wrong.
10. Severity and coldness are a good preparation for life.
11. A pretense of gratitude is better than honest ingratitude.
12. The way you behave is more important than the way you really are.
13. Neither parents nor God would survive being offended..
14. Children are undeserving of respect simply because they are children
15. Strong feelings are harmful.
16. Parents are creatures free of drives and guilt.
17. Parents are always right.

When we consider the major role intimidation plays in this ideology, which was still at the peak of its popularity at the turn of the century, it is not surprising that Sigmund Freud had to conceal his surprising discovery of adults' sexual abuse of their children, a discovery he was led to by the testimony of his patients....

...For now I must limit myself to stressing how important it is that we all be aware of the effect of the commandment to refrain from placing blame on our parents. This commandment, deeply imprinted in us by our upbringing, skillfully performs the function of hiding essential truths from us, or even making them appear as their exact opposites. The price many of us must pay for this is severe neurosis.... What becomes of all those people who are the successful products of a strict upbringing?... What becomes of [their] forbidden and therefore unexpressed anger?

[The significance of the command to not place blame on one's parents is due... not only to the fact that challenging it is key to our healing – key to our healing from the abuse of child-rearing to recognize that our parents were wrong – but also to understanding – through Bentham... and through our own observations... the larger political reality – that the parent is indeed the deputy of the state... – P.S.]

[The November 15, 2015 show ends here.]

—

["151122stayinghiddenispowersmo_1.mp3":]

The November 22nd show – themes and things: “Moving through the impediments to conscious planning...” and... “What are the tactics by which we know 'power's presence?...” “What changed in the 'certainty-disproportion dynamics' (between we-the-people... and the global-state-statesmen...) in the period post-French Revolution?...” and... “Why must we see hidden-'power' in order to root our actions in an ethical basis?...” and... “'class' *means* targeting the vulnerable: lessons from Alice...” “How do we know there is 'suppression' of thought... is there not critical discussion?...” (“Love RULES” Part 2... pages 10 – 14)

—

A recent film that probes... in a specific instance (according to a review of the just-out *Trumbo*...) effects of the McCarthy era in the U.S. suggests an interesting comparison with our current (manufactured) 'reality' vis-a-vis the issue of hidden-'power'... at least to someone being subjected to its more aggressive tactics for suppressing and eliminating dissent. We've been arguing that hidden-'power' exists in our internalization of it – that our identification with 'the state' is a transference of our identification with 'Authority' more broadly... with that of our parents... that it exists in the mental frames they set in us...

...that 'power' hides in the absence of any real challenge to it... accomplished with the creation of the nation-state in a global interstate system (specifically to provide the 'power'-guys with cover... backup... and structural support) in the period post-

French Revolution – in its elimination of all other options... such that its crafted 'reality' we are conditioned to see... and feel... as 'natural'... 'fair'... 'comfortable'... at least to those who are not explicitly targeted (with economic hardship... ridicule... or EMF-weapons [and I am continuing to encourage folks to press those who consider themselves our 'leaders' to demand an accounting of the Department of the Navy... as to what EMF weapons they have that can be used against individuals... and in what ways they have been used – this is a completely 'reasonable' request given that they can be deployed invisibly... such that those who are targeted cannot know... when they experience its effects... what is causing those effects... These weapons perfectly dovetail with 'power's overall m.o. of 'staying hidden'...])

...and that 'power' hides in its innumerable clandestine actions and actors – trained to maintain the story of 'class'... and trained... more specifically... to ferret out our resistance – 'resistance' defined broadly as 'refusal to relinquish one's soul... one's original 'self' – and then to provide mis-direction... mis-education – and the suppression of critical ancestors... when thought... despite these efforts... starts to grow...

[“151122frozenandfried_2.mp3”:]

(...and the broad infiltration will not be pushing an obvious totalitarian agenda... rather... 'power' is looking here in the U.S. to transform progressive communities into conservative ones. [The manufactured 'foreclosure-crisis' was the tactic used to destroy established diverse communities in which folks got along across the false divides... 'Power' wanted the cities back... they got them back. Low-income folk have been forced out of their former homes. This is a transparent effort to rigidify 'class'-divides... such that we don't interact with each other...]) Here in Berkeley, California for instance... the shift has been dramatic and continuous in the past six years or so... The City Council this week just intensified its assault on the low-income by further criminalizing homelessness... an assault the UC – Berkeley student paper calls “regulating streets...” quoting merchants who complain of public defecation. There is no doubt that folks hanging out without homes are infiltrated with numerous false folks... there to shift public opinion against the low-income. This tactic of infiltration... because it can't be proven soon enough to stop its object from being achieved (and 'proof' in any case wastes too much energy... given our more pressing priorities...) must... as we've discussed... be made null in our 'organizing the transition' working arrangements... [the experience of being hit with EMF weapons feels like being frozen and fried at the same time...])

[“151122powerfearsourabundance_3.mp3”:]

[We need Alice to help us understand 'power's agents... We can see the world we want... open... free from coercion... in which our harmony in abundance will make our world a paradise so easily... it's very difficult to understand the fear of those who stand against it...]

[“151122allowchildrentobebig_4.mp3”:]

The fact that hidden-folks... 'power's agents... have insinuated themselves into every nook and cranny of our lives (and especially into our resistance) feels like a new thing... but only because we are only now confronting it openly... with tools that allow us to discuss the strategy globally... Karl Marx (in his *Eighteenth Brumaire* examination of the December 10 Society...) has shown us that it has been going on as a global strategy (thinking in terms of the interstate system) of the global-state-statesmen for at least one and a half centuries.

But the McCarthy era shows us a 'power' come out of hiding... believing the time propitious... that 'the people' had received enough 'preparation'... for mutual betrayal... and mindless obedience...

...they were mistaken... On the heels of repression came uprisings and resistance... came student activism... came the civil rights movement... came urban rage... came 'the people' reaching out to each other... came resistance to 'class'... came resistance to 'race'... came resistance to all the false divisions that states inculcate... came the world revolution of 1968.

In the 'heady' days of undisputed U.S. hegemony... its 'power'-guys forgot the lessons of Louis Bonaparte... their arrogance was so overweening... their contempt for the people stood stark.

1968 was for them a powerful lesson... I think we can guess what it is they learned... that they must do a 'much better job' with 'the children'... intercept early on the ones who have 'heart'... intercept much earlier any budding resistance... intercept much earlier those teachers of love... and... as it happened... they had some new weapons... and their weapons... in their strategy... fit like a hand in a glove... and together they both fit neatly into the would-be-gods 'abandonment-psychology'... or... in Alice's terms... their "vicious circle of contempt."

It's perfectly clear and obviously true... that the parent does the work of the state in conditioning us to subsume our 'will'... i.e.... what our bodies want... to the command of 'Authority'... to 'the state'. So long as the parent does this work... 'the state' continues. Yet never is this said on the Left... that ending this torturing of children called 'child-rearing' is the *only* way for this 'system' of 'class' to end...

It's not just Fascism that is distinguished by its underlying hate... but totalitarianism broadly...

...and saying that... knowing that 'class' is totalitarian... strikes sharply obvious... yet another – the original – of suppressed speech under 'class'... that names an underlying reality – an obvious truth that *must never be spoken*... only accepted... in *exactly* the same way the biblical text exhorts children to respect the parent... however cruel...

...the child feels the underlying motive of hate... and cannot even become confused by it... because the parent *must not* be questioned...

The normalized cruelty called 'child-rearing-under-class' explains the cruelty with which *all* those who are *made*-dependent are treated.

It could not be more obvious or straightforward: allow children to be 'big'... powerful... and we end 'the system'...

...everything comes back to this – our quiescence in the face of obvious... overwhelming arrogance and cruelty on the part of the state... its amassing of tremendous resources of coercion and control... while we... just watch it happen... as if it's not happening to us... but to those 'others'... 'weak'... dependent... and so they must deserve it...

I have selected the foregoing passages in order to characterize an attitude that reveals itself more or less openly, not only in Fascism but in other ideologies as well. The scorn and abuse directed at the helpless child as well as the suppression of vitality, creativity, and feeling in the child and in oneself permeate so many areas of our life that we hardly notice it anymore. Almost everywhere we find the effort, marked by varying degrees of intensity and by the use of various coercive measures, to rid ourselves as quickly as possible of the child within us – i.e., the weak, helpless, dependent creature – in order to become an independent, competent adult deserving of respect. When we reencounter this creature in our children, we persecute it with the same measures once used on ourselves. And this is what we are accustomed to call "child-rearing." (Alice Miller, *For Your Own Good: Hidden Cruelty in Child-rearing and the Roots of Violence*, p. 58)

Meld 'power's' 'secret' weapon of (differential) child-rearing (in generalized abandonment...) with its clandestine actors... its hidden planning... and hidden EMF weapons... and the result is a massive certainty-disproportion between them and us.

'Power's' strategy of ensuring that everything it does stays hidden (by means of fundamentally dishonest child-rearing...) has been its chief advantage. It means... among other things... that it can skew anything and everything that happens to its ends... purposes (set aside its straight-up invention... fabrication... and lies...) without us knowing there was intention... such that it 'seemed' (to the absent...) to happen organically... and we could not address what was happening: the omnipresent dishonesty... the manipulation of our children... the 'end' to which we were being driven... We couldn't advance our ethical stance because we couldn't see the unethical one confronting us: the *creation* of 'class'... the manufacture of a sculpted 'reality'... the massive mistreatment sanctified by order of 'the state'. 'Class' *means* the targeting of us... and our Brothers and Sisters. 'Class' *means* the sanctification of bullying.

It's all there in Alice.

["151122whatwewantiswholism_5.mp3":]

"Reflections of '3.7': the August 30, 2015 Show":

But what of 'the Left'... are they not an 'opposition'... do they not represent for an alternative vision? – all the 'progressives'... the 'Marxists'... and the 'anarchists'... Do they not give us vigorous debate... discussion... and argument?... With such engaged examination of all of the issues... How is that not 'critical discussion'??...

The progressive vision of 'socialism' was stripped of its internationalism in WWII's massive slaughter and destruction... and the ideology of 'Marxism' worked to defeat from within... like a Trojan horse with a secret mission... by mystifying 'mind' it served to divide us... by making it an Academic discussion... and by co-signing the 'mind-body-divide' propaganda.

Shouldn't our actions be guided by 'Reason'?"

But there's no contradiction... it's the split that's the issue... the elevation of 'mind'... the silencing of our bodies'... the omnipresent propaganda that we are here to serve... – which means what our bodies want can never be our priority... that we must ignore them... to be 'productive'... when what we want for our lives... is 'wholism'.

But surely in the schools there's discussion... isn't that the point of 'education'?... how do we know there is 'suppression'?

...we know because there is no discussion of feeling human energy from coercion...

...or the omnipresence of coercion in a world of abundance...

...we know because there is no discussion of a global alternative...

...we know because there is no discussion of 'power' being global...

...we know because there is no discussion of 'class'... or the fact that it's totalitarian... and that it's embedded in the practice called 'child-rearing'...

...or that obedience-training prepares us for Fascism...

...we know because there is no discussion of broad agent-infiltration... into peace groups and church groups and innocuous arts groups... and especially into debates of (state-based) 'socialism'... to ensure 'power's taboo thoughts never get raised...

...we are so *made* for being straightforward... it's a basic premise for our thought to grow... that when confronted by an omnipresent Dishonest... the discomfort we feel in our subconscious... at the disjunction between what we see and feel... and what's true... causes us to withdraw from it... it's a terrible thing to be false with your fellows... when we're made for mutual aid... So we must prepare ourselves to not be dismayed by this tactic.

How? How do we prepare for lying and duplicity... for the betrayal of a fellow traveler in life?

By being happy... by continuously growing – happiness is self-creation – by having our core-self – our fellow travelers-in-mission – wrap us in love... by having a prize that we never lose sight of... by having clear principles and practices that guide.

["151122powersforbiddenrage_6.mp3":]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

(I hope folks are checking out the Kropotkin pdf – excerpts of his essays – that I continue to add to... I am very grateful to Peter Kropotkin... not least because he is a rock of 'certainty'... he absolutely knows that we do not need anyone else to tell us what to do... and that is the certainty we're trying to grow with these shows... And it is trying to figure out – as he did – why

do not more of us share that certainty... that has led to the probing of various issues... and has led us to the folks we need to answer that question: Karl Popper... for his explanation of the 'power'-guys' use of Plato for self-justification and political strategy... Alice Miller... for our understanding of how child-rearing itself became their secret weapon...)

Turning to Alice Miller... We are reading Alice for at least three things: to see how 'the state' gets made in us... to see the deep conditioning of the Plato's tribesmen... when they were children... and to hear what suggestions Alice has... for 'de-conditioning' ourselves – dismantling 'the state-within' – breaking free of the trance...

What becomes of all those people who are the successful products of a strict upbringing?

It is inconceivable that they were able to express and develop their true feelings as children, for anger and helpless rage, which they were forbidden to display, would have been among these feelings – particularly if these children were beaten, humiliated, lied to, and deceived. What becomes of this forbidden and therefore unexpressed anger? Unfortunately, it does not disappear, but is transformed with time into a more or less conscious hatred directed against either the self or substitute persons, a hatred that will seek to discharge itself in various ways permissible and suitable for an adult.

The little Katies and Konrads of all time [under the regime of 'class'... – P.S.] have always been in agreement as adults that their childhood was the happiest period of their life...

...those who read [Lloyd de Mause's *The History of Childhood*] and realize that the children described here later turned into adults will no longer find the atrocities in human history [under 'class'... – P.S.] hard to understand. They will locate the places where the seeds of cruelty have been sown and by virtue of their discovery will conclude that the human race need not remain the victim of such cruelty forever. For, by uncovering the unconscious rules of the power game and the methods by which it attains legitimacy, we are certainly in a position to bring about basic changes. The rules of the game cannot be fully comprehended, however, unless we develop an understanding of the hazards of early childhood, that time when the ideology of child-rearing is passed on to the next generation.

Without a doubt, the conscious ideals of young parents of the present generation have changed. Obedience, coercion, severity, and lack of feeling are no longer recognized as absolute values [except among these 'power'-guys... except among those 'trainers' of a whole 'army' of children... specifically to reproduce their 'rule'... and this is one of those 'insights' – a big lesson – that derived from my book getting out into the world... my writings... my speech – that it is not simply 'how things roll' that they maintain their 'rule'. No. Rather... it is through serious and concerted planning... to the extent of 'creating' the children who become the adults who will reproduce the conditions of class... and continue the mission of realizing the *Republic*... as a global vision... So this is not by happenstance that the 'rule' of these guys has gotten tighter and tighter... that things have gotten worse and worse... that more and more of the earth has been removed from our hands... that we have less and less room in which to move... The objective of us being totally under the control of these guys... our lives totally in their hands... has been moving forward apace... And now that we understand this... it is absolutely critical that we not wait a second longer... and move forward *our* global vision – starting with expansive and broad and intensive discussions... wherever and however we can... – P.S.]

[“151122resistingpowerrecruiters_7.mp3”:]

[So... she's saying that while strict adherence to these values of submission and obedience to Authority is changing among us... we commoners... we-the-people (and that is precisely why they are accelerating their efforts to lock us down... is because we are less and less obedient... we less and less are willing to subsume ourselves... we are more and more wanting to develop our thought... and grow our gifts... and we'd best accelerate that process... and do so as a conscious strategy of resistance...) these remain the methods used to train those raised to continue the mission of creating the *Republic*... the totalitarian order in which 'power' is held in ever-fewer hands... while the rest are 'raised' to endorse and support the aims of the 'statesmen' – another name for this 'world order' is “might makes right”... or: “rule of the bullies...” And I encourage those who *have* received this kind of training... this training to serve... without question... 'the master'... 'the shepherd'... and to have as an objective becoming a 'philosopher-king' (I realize now that they use this lure to try and recruit young people... because young people want to develop their thought (we all do...) – that 'power' uses these philosophical tools as a means of intercepting potentially critical youth and getting their thought going down the wrong direction...) and serving this vision of installing Plato's *Republic*... to continue inviting ideas that challenge this notion that there is a 'best'... that deserve to rule over 'the rest'... – P.S.]

Obedience, coercion, severity, and lack of feeling are no longer recognized as absolute values. But the road to the realization of the new ideals is frequently blocked by the need to repress the sufferings of one's childhood, and this leads to a lack of empathy. [One gap – which for me is a glaring one – in her work... is the omission of the coerced work system itself... in her analysis... the fact that it structurally ordains the abandonment of children... and that makes children insecure... necessarily so... and not just insecure... but makes them vulnerable to totalitarian ideologues and recruiters... who will flatter them as being 'special'... which is an effective tactic because they never got to feel 'special'... because of this coerced-work system... – P.S.] It is precisely the little Katies and Konrads who as adults close their ears to the subject of child abuse (or else minimize its harmfulness), because they themselves claim to have had a “happy childhood.” Yet their very lack of empathy reveals the opposite: they had to keep a stiff upper lip at a very early age. Those who actually had the privilege of growing up in an empathic environment (which is extremely rare, for until recently it was not generally known how much a child can suffer), or who later create an inner empathic object, are more likely to be open to the suffering of others, or at least will not deny its existence. This is a necessary precondition if old wounds are to heal instead of merely being covered up with the help of the next generation. [We're going to be thinking more about – and hopefully she will be expanding on – this hope for healing in the creation of “an inner empathic object...” I want to think more about that... how to translate that into strategic terms... political terms... for our resistance... – P.S.]

[“151122powerfabricatesdiscord_8.mp3”:]

The “Sacred” Values of Child-Rearing

It also gives us a very special, secret pleasure to see how unaware the people around us are of what is really happening to them. (Adolf Hitler)

[We have to begin discussing this core strategy of 'power' of fabricating events in order to create divisions between us and discord among us... we have to begin discussing that it is in their interest for us to be divided from each other... for us to feel unsafe with each other... suspicious of each other... and that the only way for us to address this is to put forward our alternative... and get focused on it... completely... and work with our Brothers and Sisters... so that we can be the 'counter' to that 'sowing seeds of mistrust'-tactic... that we can be the love that they're trying to destroy... – P.S.]

People who have grown up within the value system of “poisonous pedagogy” and have remained untouched by psychoanalytic insights will probably respond to my antipedagogic position with either conscious anxiety or intellectual rejection. They will reproach me for being indifferent to “sacred” values or will say that I am displaying a naive optimism and have no idea just how bad children can be....

[The November 22, 2015 show ends here.]

[“151129freedomreunionspiral_1.mp3”:]

The November 29, 2015 show – themes and things: “We need certainty to create a process for developing our vision of a global alternative based in non-coercion and the self-development of our gifts...” and... “continuous harassment (bills... taxes... poisoned environment... constant surveillance... and secret weapons used against us... – for if you worry an animal continuously... how can it challenge you...) is the basic m.o. of 'power' at whatever point we intersect with it...” and that... “when you vest a vision on the children... it gets advanced... whether that vision is born of hate or love... they will try to get it done... Let's support the 'love'... It is urgent.” (“Love RULES” Part 3... pages 14 – 22)

November 25, 2015... Sisters and Brothers: Numerous ancestors have noted the 'evolutionary' trajectory of 'class'-bound... 'class'-mutilated... humans... We could say it is towards freedom... but... even more essentially... it is toward reunion: we want to be together. We are the living analog of that robot in the story *The Iron Giant* that *cannot help but* reconstitute his original 'self.' That is us... ever-striving to restore our original wholeness... our 'species-existence' presses upon us. This is why

we can be certain we will get there... if the 'power'-lustful do not destroy all humanity first... for they are stuck in a death-spiral... and *cannot help but* pull all of us into it with them. If we let them. Which we won't.

To get to our 'freedom/reunion'... we must: know what we want... see what stands against it (for our getting it is not 'inevitable'...) and be determined to get there. I believe this last comes from 'Aidos' – the Balance – our earth-given gift of Fairness.

Let's listen for a moment to Peter Kropotkin's observations of the event called 'the Paris Commune'... his insights speak directly to this question of 'developing certainty' that we're considering today:

This is what Paris did after the 18th of March, 1871. "I will never forget," said a friend to us, "those delightful moments of deliverance. I came down from my upper chamber in the Latin Quarter to join that immense open-air club which filled the boulevards from one end of Paris to the other. Everyone talked about public affairs; all mere personal preoccupations were forgotten; no more was thought of buying or selling; all felt ready, body and soul, to advance towards the future. Men of the middle-class, even, carried away by the general enthusiasm, saw with joy a new world opened up. 'If it is necessary to make a social revolution,' they said, 'make it then. Put all things in common; we are ready for it.' All the elements of the revolution were there, it was only necessary to set them to work. When I returned to my lodging at night I said to myself, 'How fine is humanity after all, but no one knew it; it has always been calumniated.' Then came the elections, the members of the commune were named – and then little by little the ardor of devotion and the desire for action were extinguished. Everyone returned to his usual task, saying to himself, 'Now we have an honest government, let it act for us.'" What followed everyone knows.

Instead of acting for themselves, instead of marching forward, instead of advancing in the direction of a new order of things, the people, confiding in their governors, entrusted to them the charge of taking the initiative. This was the first consequence of the inevitable result of elections. Let us see now what these governors did who were invested with the confidence of all.

Never were elections more free than those of March, 1871. The opponents of the commune admit it themselves. Never was the great mass of electors more influenced with the desire to place in power the best men, men of the future, true revolutionists. And so they did. All well-known revolutionists were elected by immense majorities; Jacobins, Blanquists, Internationalists, all three revolutionary divisions were represented in the Council of the Commune. No election could give a better government.

But what was the result of it? Shut up in the City Hall, charged to proceed after the forms established by preceding governments, these ardent revolutionists, these reformers found themselves smitten with incapacity and sterility. With all their good will and their courage they did not even know how to organize the defense of Paris. Of course people now blame the men, the individuals for this; but it was not the men who were the cause of this failure – it was the system.

In fact, universal suffrage, when it is quite free, can only produce, at best, an assembly which represents the average of the opinions which at the time are held by the mass of the people. And this average at the outbreak of the revolution has only a vague idea of the work to be accomplished, without understanding at all how they ought to undertake it. Ah, if the bulk of the nation, of the commune, could only understand before the movement what is necessary to be done as soon as the government is overturned! If this dream of the utopians of the chair could be realized, we never would have had bloody revolutions. The will of the bulk of the nation once expressed, the rest would submit to it with a good grace. But this is not how things are done. The revolution bursts out long before a general understanding has come, and those who have a clear idea of what should be done the next day are only a very small minority. The great mass of the people have as yet only a general idea of the end which they wish realized, without knowing much how to advance towards that end, and without having much confidence in the direction to follow. The practical solution will not be found, will not be made clear until the change will have already begun. It will be the product of the revolution itself, of the people in action, – or else it will be nothing, the brain of a few individuals being absolutely incapable of finding solutions which can only spring from the life of the people.

This is the situation which is reflected in the body elected by universal suffrage, even if it had not the vices inherent in representative governments in general. The few men who represent the revolutionary idea of the epoch find themselves swamped among the representatives of the revolutionary schools of the past, and the existing order of things. These men who would be so necessary among the people, particularly in the days of revolution, to sow broadcast their ideas, to put the mass in movement, to demolish the institutions of the past, find themselves shut up in a hall, vainly discussing how to

wrest concessions from the moderates, and how to convert their enemies, while there is really only one way of inducing them to accept the new idea – namely to put it into execution. The government becomes a parliament with all the vices of a middle-class parliament. Far from being a “revolutionary” government it becomes the greatest obstacle to the revolution, and at last the people find themselves compelled to put it out of the way, to dismiss those that but yesterday they acclaimed as their chosen... [Did he not just totally nail down and stand in bright sunlight what happens in every 'revolutionary' (i.e. moment when energy to turn 'class' is rather fed into the project of reinventing it... into turning it back into itself...) situation?... If just those few paragraphs had been read and discussed by every 'revolutionist'... would they not *have to* become an 'evolutionist'? – one committed to see us realize our love as a global humanity? 'Go among the people' says he... sow our freedom-seeds... sit and have all the 'taboo' discussions we need... the ones that lead to our freedom... – and would not this be that process of global visioning we need?... – P.S.] (from “Revolutionary Government” by Peter Kropotkin)

[“151129layereddillusion_2.mp3”:]

The strategic point of developing 'certainty' is 'gathering numbers'... gathering numbers rapidly. But what has made doing this such a challenge until now (now that we have the tools for exponentially multiplying the numbers of us thinking these 'new' thoughts... these thoughts of how to establish our non-hierarchical global alternative based in individual self-sufficiency... the equation has dramatically shifted...) was... as Kropotkin says... that we are confronted with a *system* – i.e. a false reality that is totalitarian...

...which means... that... just as the illusion we are born into (under 'class'...) was layered on... piece by piece: first by our parents (and 'the system' surrounding them) establishing the mental frames – our parents squeeze us because 'the system' squeezes them – material ('economic') hardship (manufactured 'scarcity'... enforced by atomization – keeping us separate and suspicious of each other...) establishing the structural underpinning of insecurity... the education 'system' reinforcing all the key myths... including... in 'higher education'... ideologies of the Left... that tell us that humans are motivated by 'self-interest'... and that 'accumulation' is the 'driving force' of 'History'... and that... therefore... we'd best let the 'statesmen' 'regulate' it... and then... if we miraculously are able to wade through all that with some 'heart' intact... they bring on the agents... to get us 'back on track'... or move us out of the story of 'class' altogether. The whole of this means most of us are uncertain... about the possibility of a free future.

“Ah, if the bulk of the nation, of the commune, could only understand before the movement what is necessary to be done as soon as the government is overturned! If this dream of the utopians of the chair could be realized, we never would have had bloody revolutions. The will of the bulk of the nation once expressed, the rest would submit to it with a good grace.”

...so... just as the illusion was layered... piece by piece... upon us... so... in just this way of 'layered-ness'... perhaps... for some... must certainty come: first doubt as to the lies we are told arrives with new information that challenges them... then questions... and with them... thought develops... as we seek out discussion... and then looking about us... testing our new insights... noticing how powerfully they explain... and then eventually the enormity of the outrage of massive Dishonesty... explodes into our psyche... and then we have certainty.

And throughout this process... there is an unthawing of Feeling... a releasing of memory... a reinterpretation of what happened... as we allow-in our sadness... face the difficult truth: that what we most wanted... meant absolutely nothing to the people who loved us... our parents.

[“151129youthvestedwithfreedom_3.mp3”:]

The outcome of this totalitarian set-up for popular uncertainty is... not surprisingly... uncertainty...

...and the only way to break into that conditioning (speaking in terms of its existence societally...) as Socrates and these 'power'-guys well know... is to reach the youth... the children... because the earth gifts them with openness (and we ourselves as well... but our openness freezes shut to the extent we have investment in 'the system'... – at least until we are presented with the alternative: “The will of the bulk of the nation once expressed, the rest would submit to it with a good grace...” – and then we find ourselves... perhaps even to our surprise... eager for it.)

[“151129keptseparatekeptdependent_4.mp3”:]

“Reflections of '3.7': the September 6, 2015 Show”:

But isn't the problem 'capitalism'?...

What 'problem'?

...that some have so much... others... little...

But what is this 'much' that some possess? Do you mean 'much' 'material stuff'?

Well yes... but beyond it... to: 'having the means to do the things you want to with your life'...

...Pursue 'happiness'?

You could say that.

But is 'capitalism' why we can't pursue 'happiness'?... why we are so burdened with bills and worry... and obligations?... why we have no time to stop and catch our breaths... let alone 'pursue happiness'... why each year the burdens grow heavier?... there's more mutual suspicion... more hardship... more children unhappy... more hunger...

...but there will always be 'winners' and losers'... won't there? After all... there's no such thing as perfect 'fairness'... Isn't what we have better than chaos? Isn't what we have the best way to manage the world's resources? Don't we need the state to manage them?

Aren't we the 'resources' the state manages chiefly? Aren't we the ones who do everything... but in yokes and on leashes? Wasn't the state created especially to subject us to the priorities of 'statesmen'... and don't they do this by keeping us obedient and dependent?... a pattern reflected in its child-rearing methods... and so... each year... don't the disparities grow?... the hardship increases as 'austerity' is imposed... each year aren't we closer to ocean-death?... each year don't we lose more species?... and haven't the Few been deciding the lives of the Many for millennia. Isn't it time for *us* to make the decisions?

But who will protect us from the terrorists?

What if 'the terrorists' are as false... as the Society of December 10 was... when Louis Napoleon established... 'rule-by-clandestine-means' practices... in which the shadow-state operates behind scenes?... Isn't it likely that the Tiny Few who have scooped up the resources of the planet... and established 'states' with them... and so have the means... and the motive... to keep us dependent and weak... would produce 'reasons' why we need them? Aren't the acts they commit toward our 'management' kept secret?... like their use of microwave energy-weapons? How can we believe 'the state' exists to serve us... when our lives grow ever-more closed-in with surveillance... and dissent is silenced with media-censorship... and with weaponry they refuse to admit exists?

But isn't the world too immense... the systems that run it too intricate... for any to operate but those who understand the whole of it... Doesn't that mean that only states possess the knowledge... and the expertise... to manage it?

Again... aren't we the ones who reproduce 'the system'... but in yokes and in harnesses? Isn't the real issue then... trust of our Brothers and Sisters? Could it be our mistrust and sense of dependency comes from the coerced-work system?... the very one we want to move beyond... to a freedom based in individual self-sufficiency and non-coercion? Could it be we only feel insufficient... because we've been kept separate?... and so our abundance kept hidden from us... and that we must compose it again... with consciousness?

[“151129childrenraisedtobeused_5.mp3”:]

(And that's what we see... in every 'evolutionary' moment – 'evolutionary'... in those that happen today – in Egypt... Istanbul... and definitely in the Occupy Movement... those moments when we feel released from the constraints of 'obedience'... and see before us simply 'the work that needs to be done'... and we are eager for it... we're eager to join with our fellows and get it done... and that's when we see our abundance... when we join hands with each other... that's when we realize how much we've been lied to about each other... like the friend of Kropotkin said: "How good humanity is! I didn't know that!"... We've been so misled... because they have insinuated agents... and captured the media... to a degree we never imagined – and because they keep material hardship at the foremost of our minds... But in those moments when we are released from the constraints of all that conditioning... all that pressure... and we see reality – the truth – we are so good at heart... we who are not on the payroll of these Tiny Few... desperate to maintain their 'control'...

Turning now to Alice: the precious gift she is I appreciate more and more every day... every day it feels like I say: "she is a saint..." because she explains the unexplainable... how fellow humans could do the unimaginable to their Brothers and Sisters – we cannot ever get that... until Alice explains it... Because while I say here that "we don't need anyone else to tell us what to do..." the reality is... that these babies... who 'power' seizes – and we're going to hear more about that from Heinrich Himmler himself... the game-plan laid out for us right there... very clear... if we had had really 'freedom of speech'... if we had had really an independent 'Left' speaking... this would have been discussed decades ago: the fact that they take from the 'lesser' 'nations' those children they consider 'the better ones'... those of better 'blood' from 'the lessers'... and raise them... – and it makes sense... we've never talked about the obvious: how do you reproduce 'the system'... the belief that you are 'a superior race'... by blood... destined to rule... to be... the 'philosopher-king-statesmen'... unless you train children to believe that? So while we say in this space that "no... we don't need anyone else to tell us what to do..." Alice is going to be explaining today that... in fact... these children are raised who absolutely need someone to tell them what to do... and that they are 'raised'... 'created'... for that to be their sole purpose in life: to wait until there is the 'father figure' to tell them what to do... and then to please him.

["151129teachesmightmakesright_6.mp3":]

So... as Alice will say... it doesn't even enter their mind... the harm they cause... or what it feels like to be on the receiving end... The only thing in their mind is: "Did I please him?"... "was I good?"... "are you happy with me?"... "do you love me?"... "will you give me some attention now?"... "will you praise me?"...

As long as we aren't aware that 'child-rearing' is actually a secret weapon – along with this microwave energy weapons – they have multiple secret weapons... And I say 'secret' because they are not discussed by us... we-who-are-trying-to-achieve-our-freedom... and if we aren't discussing what they're using against us... we're stuck... going 'round and 'round... continuously trying the same things that never worked in the past... because we aren't addressing the actual conditions facing us... the actual situation... (That's changing now... right?... we are spreading these discussions...)

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

The "Sacred" Values of Child-Rearing

It also gives us a very special, secret pleasure to see how unaware the people around us are of what is really happening to them. (Adolf Hitler)

[What we are learning... from Peter and from Alice... is that the process of developing empathy is the process of freeing ourselves from 'the state'... is the solution to "Socrates Dilemma" – and Peter's and Alice's and ours – that being: how can "...the bulk of the nation [the world...]" understand before the movement what is necessary to be done as soon as the government is overturned!..." The evolution of our love means 'the state' has already been overturned in us... what follows is mere housekeeping tasks... and modeling for our fellows-still-enthralled the empathic parent who releases them from the bondage of their identification with 'power'... with Authority... grants them the permission – those few still caught in unconscious patterns – to develop their thought. *Our* consciousness is enough... to withstand the (political) assault (backlash... reaction...) of 'power' and its agents (the traditional one being co-optation or seduction...) Our consciousness means we understand the 'power' dynamics of 'class' and how they are reproduced through totalitarian child-rearing methods... means we understand the identification with Authority in wanting to please the parent... means we have moved on from it... to freedom... bringing with us... our Brothers and Sisters... – P.S.]

People who have grown up within the value system of “poisonous pedagogy” and have remained untouched by psychoanalytic insights will probably respond to my antipedagogic position with either conscious anxiety or intellectual rejection. They will reproach me for being indifferent to “sacred” values or will say that I am displaying a naive optimism and have no idea just how bad children can be....

...In order to teach the child these almost universal [under 'class'... – P.S.] values, which are rooted in the Judeo-Christian tradition, among others, adults believe they must sometimes resort to lying deception, cruelty, mistreatment, and to subjecting the child to humiliation. In the case of the adults, however, it is not a matter of “negative values,” because they already have their upbringing behind them and use these means solely to achieve a sacred end: to save the child from telling lies in the future, from being deceitful, malicious, cruel and egotistic.

It is clear from the foregoing that a relativity of traditional moral values is an intrinsic part of this system: in the last analysis, our status and degree of power determine whether our actions are judged to be good or bad. [My son told me an interesting story of a kindergartner who pushed another child out of his way... and when my son talked with him about what happened... the child asked, “what would you do if I was a giant?”... – P.S.] This same principle prevails throughout the whole world. The strong person dictates the verdict, and the victor in a war will sooner or later be applauded, regardless of the crimes that have been committed on the road to victory....

...For my part, I can only say that there certainly are values I do not have to relativize. Our chances of survival probably depend, in the long run, on the practice of these values, among which are respect for those weaker than ourselves – including, of course, the child – and respect for life and its laws, without which all creativity would be stifled. Every brand of Fascism lacks this respect, causing psychic death and castrating the soul with the aid of its ideology. Among all the leading figures of the Third Reich, I have not been able to find a single one who did not have a strict and rigid upbringing. Shouldn't that give us a great deal of food for thought?

[“151129grantchildrighttofeel_7.mp3”:]

Those who were permitted to react appropriately throughout their childhood – i.e., with anger – to the pain, wrongs, and denial inflicted upon them either consciously or unconsciously will retain this ability to react appropriately in later life too. When someone wounds them as adults, they will be able to recognize and express this verbally. But they will not feel the need to lash out in response. This need arises only for people who must always be on their guard to keep the dam that restrains their feelings from breaking. For if this dam breaks, everything becomes unpredictable. Thus, it is understandable that some of these people, fearing unpredictable consequences, will shrink from any spontaneous reaction; the others will experience occasional outbursts of inexplicable rage directed against substitute objects or will resort repeatedly to violent behavior such as murder or acts of terrorism. A person who can understand and integrate his anger as part of himself will not become violent. He has the need to strike out at others only if he is thoroughly unable to understand his rage, if he was not permitted to become familiar with this feeling as a small child, was never able to experience it as a part of himself because such a thing was totally unthinkable in his surroundings....

[“151129makinguseofthechild_8.mp3”:]

When terrorists take innocent women and children hostage in the service of a grand and idealistic cause, are they really doing anything different from what was once done to them?... [And here I think it would elucidate to flip her words... a point she makes about Fascism and its functionaries:

“It would be an easy matter to misunderstand my claim that the untold deep humiliation and mistreatment Hitler suffered at his father’s hands without being allowed to respond was responsible for his insatiable hatred. Someone may object by saying that an individual human being cannot destroy an entire people on such a scale, that the economic crisis and the humiliation suffered by the Weimar Republic contributed to producing the catastrophe. There can be no doubt that this is true, but it was not “crises” and “systems” that did the killing, it was human beings – human beings whose fathers were able to point with pride to the obedience instilled in their little ones at a very early age.” (p. 264)

...and again... this gets us back to that gap we are here addressing... that it is 'class' itself... the coerced-work system... that sets the totalitarian nature of this manufactured (false) reality that we are forced to accept... forced to teach our children is legitimate... – P.S.] ...When they were little children full of vitality, their parents had offered them up as sacrifices to a grand pedagogic purpose, to lofty religious values, with the feeling of performing a great and good deed. [And what sets the mental frame for our being 'made-use-of' ... for all akin and subsequent 'uses' to which we put our children... but 'class' itself... and its utilitarian ideology of 'rule'... – P.S.]

...This is an example of the unrelenting, tragic nature of the unconscious compulsion to repeat. Its positive function must not be overlooked, however. Would it not be much worse if the parents' pedagogical aims were fully realized and it were possible successfully and irreversibly to murder the child's soul without this ever coming to public attention? [But... absent our Karl Popper and Martin Bernal... John Boswell... and our Good Three – Terence K. Hopkins, Giovanni Arrighi, and Immanuel Wallerstein – and Alice herself... what sense would we have made of 'power's compulsive acts?... To understand... to see the full picture clearly... is everything: "All difficulties are but easy when they are known..." our William told us... and for this and innumerable other insights that allow us to know 'power'... and so to solve this massive 'difficulty'... we owe him endlessly... – P.S.]

["151129weshalltakethechildren_9.mp3":]

...But what happens when not a trace of vital spontaneity remains because the child's upbringing was a total and perfect success, as was the case with people such as Adolf Eichmann and Rudolf Hoss? They were trained to be obedient so successfully and at such an early age that the training never lost its effectiveness, the structure never displayed any fissures, water never penetrated it at any point, nor did feelings of any kind ever jar it. To the end of their lives, these people carried out the orders they were given without ever questioning the content. They carried them out, just as "poisonous pedagogy" recommends – not out of any sense of their inherent rightness, but simply because they were orders.

This explains why Eichmann was able to listen to the most moving testimony of the witnesses at his trial without the slightest display of emotion, yet when he forgot to stand up at the reading of the verdict, he blushed with embarrassment when this was called to his attention.

The strong emphasis on obedience in Rudolf Hoss's early upbringing left its indelible mark on him, too. Certainly his father did not intend to raise him to be a commandant at Auschwitz: on the contrary, as a strict Catholic, he had a missionary career in mind for his son. But he had instilled in him at an early age the principle that the authorities must always be obeyed, no matter what their demands. Hoss writes:

Our guests were mostly priests of every sort. As the years passed, my father's religious fervor increased. Whenever time permitted, he would take me on pilgrimages to all the holy places in our own country, as well as to Einsiedeln in Switzerland and to Lourdes in France. He prayed passionately that the grace of God might be bestowed on me, so that I might one day become a priest blessed by God. I, too, was as deeply religious as was possible for a boy of my age, and I took my religious duties very seriously. I prayed with true, childlike gravity and performed my duties as acolyte with great earnestness. I had been brought up by my parents to be respectful and obedient toward all adults, and especially the elderly, regardless of their social status. I was taught that my highest duty was to help those in need. It was constantly impressed upon me in forceful terms that I must obey promptly the wishes and commands of my parents, teachers, and priests, and indeed of all adults, including servants, and that nothing must distract me from this duty. Whatever they said was always right.

These basic principles by which I was brought up became second nature to me.

When the authorities later required Hoss to run the machinery of death in Auschwitz, how could he have refused? And later, after his arrest, when he was given the assignment of writing an account of his life, he not only performed this task faithfully and conscientiously but politely expressed gratitude for the fact that the time in prison passed more quickly because of "this interesting occupation." His account has provided the world with deep insight into the background of a multitude of otherwise incomprehensible crimes.

Rudolf Hoss's first memories of his childhood are of washing compulsively, which was probably an attempt to free himself of everything his parents found impure or dirty in him. Since his parents showed him no affection, he sought this in animals, all the more since they were not beaten by his father, as he was, and thus enjoyed a higher status than children.

Similar attitudes were shared by Heinrich Himmler, who said, for example:

How can you find pleasure, Herr Kersten, in shooting from behind cover at poor creatures grazing on the edge of a wood, innocent, defenseless, and unsuspecting? It's really pure murder. Nature is so marvelously beautiful and every animal has a right to live [Quoted by Joaquim Fest, *The Face of the Third Reich*]

Yet, it was also Himmler who said:

One principle must be absolute for the SS man: we must be honest, decent, loyal, and comradely to those of our own blood and to no one else. What happens to the Russians, what happens to the Czechs, is a matter of utter indifference to me. Good blood like ours that we find among other nationalities we shall acquire for ourselves, if necessary by taking away the children and bringing them up among us. Whether the other nationalities live in comfort or perish of hunger interests me only insofar as we need them as slaves for our society; apart from that, it does not interest me. Whether or not 10,000 Russian women collapse from exhaustion while digging a tank ditch interests me only insofar as it affects the completion of the tank ditch for Germany. We shall never be cruel or heartless when it is not necessary; that is clear. We Germans, who are the only people in the world who have a decent attitude toward animals, will also adopt a decent attitude toward these human animals, but it is a crime against our own blood to worry about them or to fill them with ideals. [Quoted by Fest]

["151129rulebysociopaths_10.mp3":]

[It's useful to recall this historical bit of geopolitics (from our October 5, 2014 *Waking Up Radio* show) provided by Kevin Phillips:

Roosevelt also faced dissension in the military and intelligence communities. Not a few senior officers, especially in the navy, disagreed with the White House priority on supporting Britain against Germany. They urged greater attention to the Pacific theater and war against Japan. Some intelligence officials, in turn, were ambiguous about favoring the Soviet Union over Germany, maintaining quiet connections through Switzerland with non-Nazi Germans and some Nazi officials. During the winter of 1942, the Swiss-based Allen Dulles discussed with emissaries, at least half seriously, a settlement in which Germany would keep Austria and some other new territory, SS chief Heinrich Himmler would replace Hitler, and Eastern Europe would be made into a cordon sanitaire [...a series or chain of small neutral buffer states around a larger, potentially dangerous or hostile state...] against Communism. By way of backdrop, Missouri senator Harry Truman had argued in 1941 that as between the warring Russians and Germans, 'if we see that Germany is winning we ought to help Russia, and if Russia is winning we ought to help Germany and in that way, let them kill as many as possible.' It was not a sentiment that got Truman in trouble.... (From Kevin Phillips' *American Dynasty: Aristocracy, Fortune, and the Politics of Deceit in the House of Bush* [2004], p. 189 – 91)

...a good illustration... I think... of the fact that it is the 'system' of 'class' itself – 'Rule by Sociopaths' – that is diseased... – P.S.]

Himmler, like Hoss, was a nearly perfect product of the training given him by his father, who was first a tutor at the Bavarian court and then a headmaster by profession. Heinrich Himmler also dreamed of educating people and nations. Fest writes:

The doctor Felix Kersten, who treated him continuously from 1939 onwards and enjoyed his confidence, has asserted that Himmler himself would rather have educated foreign peoples than exterminate them. During the war he spoke enthusiastically – looking ahead to peace – of establishing military units who were “educated and trained, once education and training can be practiced again.”

[So... Heinrich Himmler dreamed of “educating peoples and nations” and that's a priority... as we just said... of these 'power'-guys... who... I'm beginning to wonder... because we're going to be discussing how Nazi ideology adopted a Hellenistic version of Christianity... that they were 'Plato-lovin'-fools'... and so... where does one end and the other begin?... 'Plato-lovin'... and Naziism... maybe down the road once we're free somebody will explain it so me... – P.S.]

In contrast to Hoss, who had been trained with total success to be blindly obedient, Himmler apparently was not entirely able to live up to the requirement of being hardhearted...

In the hopeless confusion of all criteria under the influence of a totalitarian ethic, harshness toward the victims was held justified by the harshness practiced toward oneself. “To be harsh toward ourselves and others, to give death and to take it,” was one of the mottoes of the SS repeatedly emphasized by Himmler. Because murder was difficult [this ostentatiously displayed callousness is also toward their own children... who I've seen put to utilitarian use... regardless of the harm it could cause them – they put their children into service. And not just their own children... but a lot of low-income children... and that serves multiple purposes for 'power': it's an early recruitment and beginning conditioning to get them to accept orders from the 'power'-guys... – P.S.], it was good, and justified. By the same reasoning, he was always able to point proudly, as though to a Roll of Honor, to the fact that the Order had suffered “no inner damage” from its murderous activity and had remained “decent.”

Do we not see reflected in these words the principles of “poisonous pedagogy,” with its violation of the impulses of the child's psyche?

[“151129totalviolationofourchildren_11.mp3”:]

[This is one of those critical discussions that we must have: the importance of reclaiming our children – I recall in an audio-file titled “Richard Aoki and the Abandonment of Children”... a conversation between my son and I in which he asked... “well... what do we do when we see that our children are being sucked into this agenda?... and being actively recruited by 'power'...” (looking for... as Himmler says... what they have decided are the 'better' of the 'lesser' 'nations'... to recruit them into serving this mission of theirs to install 'the Republic'... and then they provide them with the books on philosophy and sucker them... because youth are open... those who take an interest in them... because of the structural abandonment of the wage-work system... they are grateful for the attention... particularly when someone is giving them praise and flattery...) So... in that excerpt from that show... the reply to that question “what is our response?” I felt strongly about was: that we have to have an alternative... that's one of the reasons why these discussions are absolutely critical... we have to not allow our children to be used... and we have to create a world in which they are not being lied to... – P.S.]

These are only three examples of the endless number of people whose life took a similar course and who no doubt had received what is considered a good, strict upbringing. The results of the child's total subordination to the adults' will were not seen solely in his future political submissiveness (for example, to the totalitarian system of the Third Reich) but were already visible in his inner readiness for a new form of subordination as soon as he left home. For how could someone whose inner development had been limited to learning to obey the commands of others be expected to live on his own without experiencing a sudden sense of inner emptiness? Military service provided the best opportunity for him to continue the established pattern of taking orders. When someone like Adolf Hitler came along and claimed, just like Father, to know exactly what was good, right, and necessary for everyone, it is not surprising that so many people who were longing for someone to tell them what to do welcomed him with open arms and helped him in his rise to power. Young people had finally found a father substitute, without which they were incapable of functioning... [and that is one of those insights that I really need... every single day... to make sense of what I'm seeing in 'power's' army of functionaries... thank you Alice... – P.S.]

[The November 29, 2015 show ends here.]

[“151206healthytribes_1.mp3”:]

The December 6, 2015 show – themes and things: “ what is a healthy 'tribalism'?... and how do we use it to combat... the destructive notion (destructive of our earlier rich diversity... and which we are recomposing... in forming 'open tribes'... 'associations'...) to combat the destructive notion of 'class'... and build certainty that 'happiness' requires the individual self-

sufficiency of each one of us globally...” and that we are... “working together to 'pursue this happiness'... which is our codified right here in the U.S. – granting us the ability and responsibility to initiate a global movement to end the 'class'-system ('rule by the few'...) – in doing this we become 'associated mobilizations inaugurating the realization of our right of happiness'... i.e.... “we model it... we make it” – the honest flip of 'power's falseness...” and... “how can our associations reinforce 'certainty'?...” (“Love RULES” Part 4... pages 22 – 28)

[Please listen again to this wordbeat-excerpt from the February 1, 2015 show on this question... which argues that we have been stuck in this story of 'class'... which has caused unfathomable hardship and suffering... for millennia... but we are living in a time when we can... and must... move beyond it... if our humanity is to continue to exist... and we are talking globally about it... seeing what must be done... agreeing that we must ensure that the outcome of this time of transition is freedom... for every human being (it is posted to the 'Blog' page with the 'Kropotkin' pdf): “150506onbuildingnumbers.mp3”: “Because we in the U.S. have this codified right to 'pursue happiness'... and that is not an individual pursuit... but... rather... it is in fact our right as a people to come together and collectively discuss: What does it mean... to 'pursue happiness'... if not to realize our inherent gifts... our right to grow our knowledge... as they do!... or as they think they do but as we do authentically... our right as a people to pursue truth... We have the codified right to come together and discuss how we do that... as a collective... as a people... In a sense I'm asking the same question that our Academe Three are asking: How do we confront the dilemmas facing our ability to move on as a global humanity? How do we do that? Because we are... all of us global humans...living in a moment when the story *has* to change... Feel me.”]

[“151206rightofhappiness_2.mp3”:]

December 2, 2015... Sisters and Brothers: 'Atomization' makes us weak... it is 'power's chief political strategy for maintaining its supremacy...

While for themselves they emphasize... no economic competition (or disharmony otherwise...) for us they work double-time... no scheme too low... if it gets us going for each other's throats...

Fulfilling Plato's command to ever-widen the gulf between 'the hoard'... and 'the master class'... they ostentatiously display the mess they've made of society globally to their progeny... and teach them that only they possess the moral authority to make the decisions... for... while we are riven by division (so goes the argument...) they are family... they are tribe... they know how to sacrifice 'self' for the larger end of establishing 'perfection'... of installing the 'Republic'.

In the October 4, 2015 show we said that this 'self-organization' of 'power' is called “‘the state’ – official and clandestine – and all its institutions” – making it a totalitarian system – the key function of which is to prevent us... we-the-people... from similarly organizing to pursue our... *authentic* – because it honors the ancestors... the earth... and each other... as source – *self-creation*... simultaneously as individuals and as a people... our authentic right of happiness... This is discussed in the audio-file: “151004pursuehappinessasapeople.mp3”... in which we said that our objective of becoming a people that pursues 'happiness' must ask the question: “what do we require as a people to be happy?...” – a question that will rapidly become a conversation about coercion... which will rapidly be exposed as harassment imposed by craft... the craft of manufacturing scarcity... given the enormous abundance of the earth... given that we have the means to work together globally. In a world of abundance 'scarcity' must be created... by the only actors – the global-state statesmen – the relevance of whose 'function' depends on... on 'the people' being threatened continuously with material hardship. And... obviously... manufacturing hardship and misery does not induce the pursuit of happiness.

In our June 14, 2015 show on “practical politics”... we said that we counter 'power's tactic of infiltration (including the form of 'infiltration' we have been calling 'internalized discipline'... or 'the state in us'... or Marcuse's 'democratic introjection'...) – the point of which tactic... infiltration – in the case of our mobilizations to move the agenda of 'freedom' – would be to attempt to identify 'the leadership' (those in whom an alternative [and authentic...] allegiance resides... in order to mess with it – and that we counter agent-infiltration by ensuring that our movement (for the release of human energy globally) is simultaneously a movement for soul-sufficiency [see the audio-file: “150614practicalpolitics.mp3”.]

So... on the one hand... we can only claim our 'right of happiness' by becoming 'a people'... and on the other... we can only become 'a people' by becoming 'fully-developing individualities'... and so: ... we can only claim our 'right of happiness' by

becoming 'fully-developing individualities'... i.e... they occur simultaneously... dismantling the 'state-in-us' is dismantling our atomization... is developing our understanding and our empathy – that our expansiveness depends on our coming together and honoring our own and each other's gifts... while never losing sight of the goal... and daily moving closer to it... figuring out ways to bring with us... our Brothers and Sisters.

[“151206pointingheadlights_3.mp3”:]

A recent encounter with one of these false folks (who intentionally hit my car... and pretended otherwise...) was a needed reality-check for me... because... to my dismay... it seemed to me I caved – sleep-while-being-radiated-and-muscles-electrically-paralyzed...

(...I feel like they're using me as a test subject... that they're testing a sizable chunk of their arsenal – and definitely as a hierarchy of punishments – we'll hear more about that later... – a sizable chunk of their arsenal of microwave weapons on me... including lasers [more during the day it seems...] and this latest [used on me as I sleep at 'night'...] de-hydrates to an extreme degree... and feels like being stuck in an electro-magnet – the skin of my hands and feet have dried up. And in this pointing-headlights-at-me business... for years I assumed it was simply about targeting [and that may be mostly what it is...] but given the immediate pain it sometimes causes I'm beginning to consider the obsessive insistence of these tracker-folks on doing this in light of Leuren Moret's warning that these 'shadow-state'-guys have the ability to 'weaponize the energy in the environment'... and lasers are light-energy EMF weapons... [Leuren Moret is also mentioned in our November 17, 2013 and January 19, 2014 shows...] the only way to defend our right to resistance is to put forward our alternative...)

[“151206nullifyingagentaction_4.mp3”:]

(...two last points on the issue of weaponizing microwave energy... and the necessary insinuation into our ranks of folks willing to be operatives who deliver them... the bad messages: we have to start pooling information in order to respond strategically... and... it's important that we see that in whatever occupation where opinion and thought can be manipulated... there are agents... and while that means that media and the arts are at the top of that list... any and every occupation is infiltrated... no particular one can be particularly indicted...)

...to my dismay... it seemed to me I caved – sleep-while-being-radiated-and-muscles-electrically-paralyzed...and its resulting swollen head that pressed against my brain... had had its spirit-dampening effect... and she just rolled over me (metaphorically speaking...) then backed up and rolled some more... her bluster never let up... I could barely follow her argument.

Point being: these folks are trained to be like pit-bulls... to have a commanding presence... to take charge... and I've been pondering how 'real' will that 'practical politics' guidance be... as we must be tender and open for a 'love evolution'... and yet as determined to achieve it as 'power' is to stop it. And while it's certainly so that infiltration of a movement to end coercion will require a subtler approach from any agent... that 'commanding presence' they're taught... that training to grab our hands and lead us... is troubling... and I think we should make more specific something previously said... that the agreements we make together at the outset of our collaborative efforts are critical to the success of them.

Let's revisit our previous discussion on this – from the June 14, 21, 28 and July 5, 2015 shows – and think through again what those agreements need to be.

But let's also consider the implications for our dilemma of what Kropotkin has said... and shared with us [first quoted in our November 1, 2015 show]:

The march forward in political institutions appears to us to consist in abolishing in the first place the State authority which has fixed itself upon society and which now tries to extend its functions more and more; and in the second place, in allowing the broadest possible development for the principle of free agreement, and in acknowledging the independence of all possible associations formed for definite ends, embracing in their federations the whole of society. The life of society itself we understand, not as something complete and rigid, but as something never perfect – something ever striving for new forms, and ever changing these forms in accordance with the needs of time. This is what life is in nature.

That's a really important quote which I know we'll be revisiting (along with the more extended versions of it...) because it is the kernel... the nut... of our strategy... structure... form – what's the right word? – of our global freedom... as it addresses specifically what many of us have difficulty seeing as we begin to picture our global alternative to force and coercion – many of us think: “how do we do that?... the world's a big place...” – but he breaks it down... makes it simple... and it is an elegant simplicity that resonates so true to me: that it is simply... the multitude of our global associations on which our future is based.

[“151206momentofevolution_5.mp3”:]

...and what his friend told him [first quoted in our November 29, 2015 show]:

This is what Paris did after the 18th of March, 1871. “I will never forget,” said a friend to us, “those delightful moments of deliverance. I came down from my upper chamber in the Latin Quarter to join that immense open-air club which filled the boulevards from one end of Paris to the other. Everyone talked about public affairs; all mere personal preoccupations were forgotten; no more was thought of buying or selling; all felt ready, body and soul, to advance towards the future. Men of the middle-class, even, carried away by the general enthusiasm, saw with joy a new world opened up. 'If it is necessary to make a social revolution,' they said, 'make it then. Put all things in common; we are ready for it.' All the elements of the revolution were there, it was only necessary to set them to work. When I returned to my lodging at night I said to myself, 'How fine is humanity after all, but no one knew it; it has always been calumniated.' Then came the elections, the members of the commune were named – and then little by little the ardor of devotion and the desire for action were extinguished. Everyone returned to his usual task...”

From them we learned the following lessons: [“151101individualenergyasbasis.mp3”:] “There are some things we can say for certain about the 'political organization' of freedom: that it is decentralized... that its basic unit will be the individual...”

...and: [“151108usbiggetsourfreedom_4.mp3”:] “... each one of us must be leaders – that's what it means to say that the basic unit of political organization in our freedom and in our transition to freedom is the individual – no more surrendering our leadership capacities to others... each one of us has to get 'big'...”

“... each one of us must be leaders... each one of us has to get 'big'...” – acknowledging... obviously... that each one of us is at a different point in that process of regaining our power... our full power... our authentic selves... and we'll be talking more about that reality check as well...

[“151206rebecomingauthentic_6.mp3”:]

For in showing and modeling true wealth... our true abundance... showing the creative power of it... we are showing our Brothers and Sisters themselves: that which they have (to play on the words of Shakespeare...) but do not yet possess...

...and this is true for all of us... under 'class'... to an extent. For all of us it is a continuous process... of re-becoming authentic: as Bruce Lee says “to express oneself honestly... not lying to oneself... that... my friend... is very hard to do...”

...so when agents come among us – as they will... they must... – it's important that we acknowledge their inevitable presence (speaking generically... I'm not suggesting we can be certain... who is or is not an agent...) acknowledge the presence of paid-folk among us with love... and in such a way that every single one of is... in a sense... 'indicted' (and this is definitely not an individual process... this business of accepting the fact that there are folks among us paid to disrupt or mislead our movement... we need the support and mutual aid of our fellows to do this...)

But... as to being 'led' by any particular one... this must be denied by the very structure of our cooperative association...

...because the basic unit of political organization – in the transition no less than in our freedom – is 'the individual'...

What does that mean? It means self-sufficiency politically (and there's a lot captured in that phrase which we'll have to unpack next week...) It means the light of our individuality shines bright... It means... as Whitman said... no papers bind our agreement... only our spirit of freedom leads us:

(Were you looking to be held together by lawyers?
Or by an agreement on a paper? or by arms?
Nay, nor the world, nor any living thing, will so cohere.)
(Walt Whitman, "Over the carnage rose prophetic a Voice")

It means we come together... we help each other... out of love – that our word is our bond...

...and... in the process... we are destroying... dismantling... 'class'... in the model of 'soul-sufficiency' we present...

Peter Kropotkin presented us with the answer... it's been sitting there waiting for us to catch up for over a century...

...or perhaps just waiting for the Internet...

["151206whatistheproblem_7.mp3":]

"Reflections of '3.7': the September 13, 2015 Show":

So... what is the problem?... is the problem 'the state'... is the problem 'coercion'?... or is it the unequal distribution of resources?... is the problem the rush... that we can't live our lives fully?... or that we don't know our neighbors... that there is no community?... is the problem our training in 'obedience'?... and our inadequate education?... or is it the censoring of the media... and the suppression of key conversations... or is it hierarchy and division?... or is it atomization?... or more basically... simply 'scarcity' and need?... or is it the abandonment of our children?... and the mindset of utilitarianism?... or is the problem the very thoughts we think?... or is it the wage-work system?... or is it just that we aren't free... or that we don't make the decisions?... or is it these tiny souls: the 'philosopher-king-statesmen'?... who so believe they are entitled to rule us?... And what does it mean: 'the state'?... what does it mean: 'abandonment'?... and what should 'education' be... and what is: 'utilitarianism'?... and what do we mean by 'freedom'?... and by 'living our lives fully'?... Could the problem be we don't have a language to speak in – that we lack a common language of freedom?... and that we don't make the definitions?

["151206infantilesubjectionofself_8.mp3":]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

In *The Face of the Third Reich*, Fest documents the servile, uncritical, and almost infantile naïveté with which the men who were to enter the annals of infamy spoke of Hitler's omniscience, infallibility, and divinity. That is the way a little child sees his father. And these men never advanced beyond that stage. I shall quote several passages here because, without them, it might be hard for today's generation to believe that these men who later went down in history could have been so lacking in inner substance. Fest here quotes Hemann Goering:

If the Catholic Christian is convinced that the Pope is infallible in all religious and ethical matters, so we National Socialists declare with the same ardent conviction that for us, too, the Führer is absolutely infallible in all political and other matters having to do with the national and social interests of the people... It is a blessing for Germany that in Hitler the rare union has taken place between the most acute logical thinker and truly profound philosopher and the iron man of action, tenacious to the limit.

And again:

Anyone who has any idea of how things stand with us... knows that we each possess just so much power as the Führer wishes to give. And only with the Führer and standing behind him is one really powerful, only then does one hold the strong powers of the state in one's hands; but against his will, or even just without his wish, one would instantly become

totally powerless. A word from the Führer and anyone whom he wishes to be rid of falls. His prestige, his authority are boundless.

What is actually being described here is the way a little child feels toward his authoritarian father. Goering openly admitted:

It is not I who live, but the Führer who lives in me.... Every time I am in his presence, my heart stands still.... Often I couldn't eat anything again until midnight, because before then I should have vomited in my agitation. When I returned to Karinhall at about nine o'clock, I actually had to sit in a chair for some hours in order to calm down. This relationship turned into downright mental prostitution for me.

In his speech of June 30, 1934, Rudolf Hess, another top Nazi official, also admits openly to this attitude, without being hampered by any feelings of shame or discomfort – a situation we can hardly imagine today, half a century later. He says in this speech:

We note with pride that one man remains beyond all criticism, and that is the Führer. This is because everyone senses and knows: he is always right, and he will always be right. The National Socialism of all of us is anchored in uncritical loyalty, in a surrender to the Führer that does not ask about the why in individual cases, in the silent execution of his orders. We believe that the Führer is obeying a higher call to shape German history. There can be no criticism of this belief.

Fest comments:

In his unbalanced approach to authority Hess resembles surprisingly many leading National Socialists who, like him, had “strict” parents. There is a good deal of evidence that Hitler profited considerably from the damage wrought by an educational system that took its models from the barracks and brought up its sons to be as tough as army cadets. The fixation on the military world, the determining feature of their early development, shows not only in the peculiar mixture of aggressiveness and doglike cringing so typical of the “old Fighter” but also in the lack of inner independence and the need to receive orders. Whatever hidden rebellious feelings the young Rudolf Hess may have had against his father, who emphatically demonstrated his power one last time when he refused to let his son go to a university but forced him, against his wishes and the pleas of his teachers, to go into business with a view to taking over his own firm in Alexandria – the son, whose will had been broken over and over again, henceforth sought father and father substitute wherever he could find them. One must want leaders! [As we... at least initially... before we understand (with the help of the ancestors who want us to be free...) more deeply... as we tend to judge others by ourselves... it seems likely that the children of the Plato's Tribesmen believe we... as they do... “want leaders”... and believe that their 'fathers' – and one day themselves – as trained and tested 'philosopher-king-statesmen' are 'the best'... the only fully qualified ones... to lead us... and that they see if we don't that we 'must' defer to them... that it is only ignorance behind our resistance... – P.S.]

[“151206substitutefatherthestate_9.mp3”:]

When non-Germans watched Adolf Hitler's appearances in newsreels, they were never able to understand the adulation he was given or the number of votes he received in 1933. It was easy for them to see through his human weaknesses, his artificial pose of self-assurance, his specious arguments; for them, it was not as though he were their father. For the Germans, however, it was much more difficult. A child cannot acknowledge the negative sides of his or her father, and yet these are stored up somewhere in the child's psyche, for the adult will then be attracted by precisely these negative, disavowed sides in the father substitutes he or she encounters. An outsider has trouble understanding this.

We often ask how a marriage can last, how, for example, a woman can go on living with a certain man, or vice versa. It may be that the woman endures extreme torment in this relationship, continuing it only at the cost of her vitality. But she is mortally afraid at the thought of her husband leaving her. Actually, such a separation would probably be the great opportunity of her life, yet she is totally unable to see this as long as she is forced to repeat in her marriage the early torment, now relegated to her unconscious, inflicted on her by her father. For when she thinks about being abandoned by her husband, she is not reacting to her present situation but is reexperiencing her childhood fears of abandonment and the time when she was in fact dependent on her father. I am thinking here specifically of a woman whose father, a musician, took the mother's place when she died but who often disappeared suddenly when he went on tour. My patient was much too little at the time to bear these sudden separations without a feeling of panic. In her analysis we had been aware of this for a long time, but her fear of being abandoned by her husband did not subside until her dreams revealed to her what had hitherto been unconscious: the other –

brutal and cruel – side of her father, whom she had until then remembered only as loving and tender. As a result of confronting this knowledge, she experienced an inner liberation and was now able to begin the process of becoming autonomous. [I imagine there is an analogous process of confrontation and healing as we separate from that 'substitute father' 'the state' and its many surrogates... – P.S.]

[“151206continuationofchildhood_10.mp3”:]

I mention this example because it demonstrates mechanisms that may have played a role in the election of 1933. The adulation accorded Hitler is understandable not only because of the promises he made (who doesn't make promises before an election?) but because of the way in which they were presented. It was precisely his theatrical gestures, ridiculous to a foreigner's eyes, that were so familiar to the masses and therefore held such a great power of suggestion for them. Small children are subject to this same sort of suggestion when their big father, whom they admire and love, talks to them. What he says is not important, it is *the way* he speaks that counts. The more he builds himself up, the more he will be admired, especially by a child raised according to the principles of “poisonous pedagogy.” When a strict, inaccessible, and distant father condescends to speak with his child, this is certainly a festive occasion, and to earn this honor no sacrifice of self is too great. A properly raised child will never be able to detect it if this father – this big and mighty man – should happen to be power-hungry, dishonorable, or basically insecure. And so it goes; such a child can never gain any insight into this kind of situation because his or her ability to perceive has been blocked by the early enforcement of obedience and the suppression of feelings.

A father's nimbus [“*aureole*: a light or color that surrounds someone...” an aura... in Greek: a 'gentle breeze'...] is often composed of attributes (such as wisdom, kindness, courage) he lacks, along with those every father undoubtedly possesses, at least in the eyes of his children: uniqueness, bigness, importance, and power. If a father misuses his power by suppressing his children's critical faculties, then his weaknesses will stay hidden behind these fixed attributes. He could say to his children just as Adolf Hitler cried out in all seriousness to the German people: “How fortunate you are to have me!”

If we keep this in mind, Hitler's legendary influence on the men who surrounded him loses its mystery. Two passages from Hermann Rauschnig's book, *The Voice of Destruction*, illustrate this:

[Gerhart] Hauptmann was introduced. The Führer shook hands with him and looked into his eyes. It was the famous gaze that makes everyone tremble, the glance which once made a distinguished old lawyer declare that after meeting it he had but one desire, to be back at home in order to master the experience in solitude.

Hitler shook hands again with Hauptmann.

Now, thought the witnesses of the meeting, now the great phrase will be uttered and go down in history.

Now! thought Hauptmann.

And the Führer of the German Reich shook hands a third time, warmly, with the great writer, and passed on to his neighbor.

Later Gerhart Hauptmann said to his friends: “It was the greatest moment of my life.”

Rauschnig continues:

I have frequently heard people confess that they are afraid of him, that they, grown though they are, cannot visit him without a pounding heart. They have the feeling that the man will suddenly spring at them and strangle them, or throw the inkpot at them, or do some other senseless thing. There is a great deal of insincere enthusiasm, with eyes hypocritically cast up, and a great deal of self-deception behind the talk of an unforgettable experience. Most visitors want their interviews to be of this kind... But these visitors who were fain to hide their disappointment gradually came out with it when they were pressed. Yes, it is true he did not say anything special. No, he does not look impressive, it is impossible to claim that he does. Why, then, make up things about him? Yes, they said, if you look critically at him he is, after all, rather ordinary. The nimbus – it is all the nimbus.

And so, when a man comes along and talks like one's own father and acts like him, even adults will forget their democratic rights or will not make use of them. They will submit to this man, will acclaim him, allow themselves to be manipulated by him, and put their trust in him, finally surrendering totally to him without even being aware of their enslavement. One is not normally aware of something that is a continuation of one's own childhood. For those who become as dependent on someone as they once were as small children on their parents, there is no escape. A child cannot run away, and the citizen of a totalitarian regime cannot free himself or herself. The only outlet one has is in raising one's own children. Thus, the citizens

who were captives of the Third Reich had to rear their children to be captives as well, if they were to feel any trace of their own power.

[“151206feelingpathtotruth_11.mp3”:]

But these children, who now are parents themselves, did have other possibilities. Many of them have recognized the dangers of pedagogical ideology, and with a great deal of courage and effort they are searching for new paths for themselves and their children.

Some of them, especially the creative writers, have found the path to experiencing the truth of their childhood, a path that was blocked for earlier generations. In *Lange Abwesenheit (Long Absence)*, Brigitte Schwaiger, for example, writes:

I hear Father's voice; he is calling my name. He wants something from me. He is far off in another room. And wants something from me, that's why I exist. He goes past me without saying a word. I am superfluous. I shouldn't even exist.

If you had worn your wartime captain's uniform at home from the beginning, perhaps then many things would have been clearer. – A father, a real father, is someone who mustn't be hugged, who must be answered even if he asks the same question five times and it looks as though he is asking it for the fifth time just to be sure that his daughters are submissive enough to give an answer every time, a father who is free to interrupt one in midsentence.

Once a child's eyes are opened to the power game of child-rearing, there is hope that he or she will be freed from the chains of “poisonous pedagogy,” for this child will be able to remember what happened to him or her.

When feelings are admitted into consciousness, the wall of silence disintegrates, and the truth can no longer be held back. Even intellectualizing about whether “there is a truth per se,” whether or not “everything is relative,” etc., is recognized as a defense mechanism once the truth, no matter how painful, has been uncovered. I found a good example of this in Christoph Meckel's portrayal of his father in *Suchbild: Über meinen Vater (Wanted: My Father's Portrait)*:

In the grown-up there is a child who wants to play.

There is in him a dictator who wants to punish.

In my grown-up father there was a child who played heaven on earth with his children. Part of him was an officer type who wanted to punish us in the name of discipline.

Our happy father's pointless pampering. On the heels of the lavish dispenser of sweet treats came an officer with a whip. He had punishment ready for his children. He was the master of what amounted to a spectrum of punishments, a whole catalogue. First there were scoldings and fits of rage – that was bearable and passed over like a thunderstorm. Then came the pulling, twisting, and pinching of the ear, the blow to the ear, and the little, mean punches to the head. Next came being sent from the room and after that being locked away in the cellar. And further: the child was ignored, was humiliated and shamed by reproachful silence. He was taken advantage of to run errands, was banished to bed or ordered to carry coal. Finally, as reminder and as climax came the punishment, the exemplary punishment pure and simple. This punishment was a measure reserved for Father, and it was administered with an iron hand. Corporal punishment was used for the sake of order, obedience, and humaneness so that justice might be done and this justice might be imprinted in the child's memory. The officer type reached for the switch and led the way down into the cellar, followed by the child, who had no sense of guilt to speak of. He had to stretch out his hands (palms up) or bend over his father's knee. The thrashing was merciless and precise, accompanied by loud or soft counting, and took place without any possibility of reprieve. The officer type expressed his regret at being forced to take this step, claiming it hurt him too, and it did hurt him. The shock of this “step” was followed by a prolonged period of dismay: the officer demanded cheerfulness. He led the way up the stair with exaggerated cheerfulness, set a good example in a charged atmosphere, and was offended if the child wasn't interested in being cheerful. For several days, always before breakfast, the punishment in the cellar was repeated. It became a ritual, and the obligatory cheerfulness became a form of harassment.

For the rest of the day, the punishment had to be forgotten. Nothing was said about guilt or atonement, and justice and injustice were kept out of sight. The children's cheerfulness did not materialize. White as chalk, mute or crying furtively, brave, dejected, resentful, and bitterly uncomprehending – even in the night they were still in the clutches of justice. It

rained down on them and made its final impact, it had the last word out of their father's mouth. The officer type also punished them when he was home on leave and was downcast when his child asked him if he didn't want to go back to war.

[“151206ideologyofbeating_12.mp3”:]

It is obvious that painful experiences are being described here; the subjective truth, at least, comes through in every sentence. Anyone who doubts the objective content because the story seems too monstrous to be true need only read the manuals of “poisonous pedagogy” to be convinced. There are even sophisticated analytical theories which suggest in all seriousness that the perceptions of the child as presented here by Christoph Meckel are the projections of his “aggressive or homosexual desires” and which interpret the actual events he describes as an expression of the child's fantasies. A child whom “poisonous pedagogy” has made unsure of the validity of his or her perceptions can easily be made even more unsure of these theories later as an adult and can be tyrannized by them even if the theories are belied by experience.

For this reason, it is always a miracle when a portrayal such as Meckel's is possible in spite of his “good upbringing.” Perhaps the explanation in his case is that his upbringing, at least one side of it, was interrupted for several years while his father was away at war and then a prisoner of war. It is highly unlikely that someone who was consistently subjected to such treatment throughout childhood and adolescence would be able to write so honestly about his father. During his decisive years he would have had to learn day in and day out how to repress the misery he endured; if acknowledged, his misery would show him the truth about his childhood. He will not accept this truth, however, but will instead subscribe to theories that make the child the sole projecting subject instead of the victim of the parents' projections.

When someone suddenly gives vent to his or her rage, it is usually an expression of deep despair, but the ideology of child beating and the belief that beating is not harmful serve the function of covering up the consequences of the act and making them unrecognizable. The result of a child becoming dulled to pain is that access to the truth about himself will be denied him all his life. Only consciously experienced feelings would be powerful enough to subdue the guard at the gates, but these are exactly what he is not allowed to have.

(Thank you for taking the time to delve deep... with Alice... into why we have been asleep... and why we have been able to be abused... taken advantage of... by these tiny tiny Few... why we don't believe we deserve to be free. But we are reclaiming that vitality we lost... we are reclaiming our authenticity... and simultaneously withering that 'state-in-us'... growing our gifts and ourselves... and joining with our Brothers and Sisters to create the world we deserve...

...but we can only do that globally... which means we have to start talking to each other *toute suite*... We've got a lot to do... and the means to do it...)

[The December 6, 2015 show ends here.]

[“151213horrorstory_1.mp3”:]

The December 13, 2015 show – themes and things: “...training in obedience silences the authentic 'self'...” or: “the implications of the equation: 'utilitarianism = dualism = a might-makes-right ethics = obedience training = the soul's expression replaced by performance = wounding of the authentic self...' – the implications of the generalized (under 'class') imposition of this training for our global-society planning process...” and... “*seeing* the structure of our global arrangement based in non-coercion and the self-development of our gifts...” and... “redesigning our interior infrastructure...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 5... pages 28 – 36)

December 8, 2015... Sisters and Brothers: The following word-beat from our July 14, 2013 show (posted to the 'Blog' page with the 'Blume' pdf...) argues that we have to change “the structure of 'class' itself...”

["150121createanewstructure.mp3": "And even though so many ancestors saw through the cons... and left their precious help... not a one could overcome the structure of class itself.... We have to change the infrastructure... and... never doubt... we all want this... good fellowship... heart... which... if we develop the stances and the practices we need... trumps heartless 'division'... brings... the upstart Spring. And therein lies the key to a successful strategy when we find false minds are crawling through our movement.... I believe that allegiance to our values can inoculate us from the poisonous bite of agent provocateurs... Last week we said that the structures of class are designed to keep us contained... and that inserting good people in them cannot change them... but there is a second part to that question... which is that the real action of 'statesmen' happens behind scenes... and that the forefront is theater... and a third part... which is that the 'imperialism of rationalism' erects interior structures in us all...." [Spoken word is from our July 14, 2013 radio broadcast.]

...with its 'power'-in-hiding m.o.... and its 'forefront-theater'...

(...and on that note... when you can't turn around on the Left... without bumping into media-sponsored 'Bernie Sanders-adulation'... that's hidden-'power' behind it... it's the 'Nader-strategy' replayed with contempt... or desperation... as they must have plausible deniability when they rig the machines... and etc.... again... they are salivating – sweating actually – to regain the office of U.S. president... So... strategically... unless we're busy organizing that 'One-Day Global General Strike'... strategically it seems... we'd best vote for Hilary... as they want no further delays in their plans to roll out on us a more hard-core totalitarianism (if we are to believe what we hear from the media... the degree of obedience in this country is pretty extreme... which should be lighting a fire under every single one of us...) So it seems they are ready to roll-out a more hard-core totalitarianism... – and... by the way... is it not the Horror Story of our days that most of us didn't know that we're living in a Fascist state? – I certainly didn't... when I blithely released *Waking Up*... starting myself on this path of developing 'certainty' about the existence of hidden-'power' – and so I do understand when folks have a difficult time crediting the existence of these guys... and this treatment I'm receiving is not necessarily something the average folk are going to experience... so we are going to have to proceed... plow forward... even in the absence of perhaps the degree of 'certainty' I have... simply based on the truth of our body's need to be free... to begin to discuss with Alice Miller. Because you don't have to believe in hidden-'power' to credit what she says... the truth of what she says is so patent... and when we hear it... it is earth-shaking... our bodies shaking... when we realize the degree to which we have been deeply conditioned... She's going to say that when you plow through that conditioning and see reality... and claim your true self... you can't go back – that was said by Walter Lundquist... I believe... in Studs Terkel's book *Working* that I quoted in *Waking Up*: "Once you wake up the human animal you can't put it back to sleep again..." Alice says something very similar: "Once you have found your authentic self you will not relinquish it for any price... and that is the truth – it is hard-won getting there... and definitely... there is no alternative... unless you want to live out your days completely in that fog of conditioning – which we don't... as living things. ... So... best vote for Hilary!... And isn't that a Horror Story... that we didn't know we're living in a Fascist state – that DARPA guy [quoted in the interview playing at the station before the show...] said they base a lot of their research on sci-fi... well I can believe it... because sci-fi is where the truth seems to be told... it is "Invasion of the Body Snatchers" out there. Truly... that is a Horror Story what's going on right now... And what can you call it if not 'Fascist'? I'm typing with a swollen face and knees [plus-plus...] so what else can it be... with drones in tow – in the sky... on foot... and in autos – wherever I go? [and a mounting death toll... from killing on the down-low... about which we will not be told [there won't be any books with writers interviewed about that on any of these 'left-wing' shows...]] I 'can't wait' to see what descends on me when I go shortly to attempt an upload [transmission speeds have been deliberately slowed... my humble pdf requires multiple attempts and browsers to accomplish it – to allow time... for the drone to arrive...])

So we understand this 'structure of class itself' a little bit better now that we've been delving into Alice Miller... and Martin Bernal... and Karl Popper... and Immanuel Wallerstein... and Alfred O. Hirschman... and John Boswell – we owe many good folk for our ability to put together these puzzle-pieces... I'd like to see some left-wing commentator do a show that integrates all of those... and then tell me they find it difficult to believe that there are hidden 'power'-guys who operate on the down-low... behind scenes.

["151213resourcedepletion_2.mp3":]

...its 'forefront-theater'... and its redesign of our interiors...

...and now we have more to say on that score... now that we have engaged in a process of synthesis and advancement of the insights provided by key ancestors and living scholars whose work... in sum and conjunction... exposes the 'power'-guys...

the ones who hide... who coalesced in the aftermath of the French Revolution as – what was then called 'the middle class' – a self-conscious group of 'meritocratic' self-anointed rulers that we have been calling Plato's Tribesmen...

...now that we see these guys through their acts... the massive mischief made with 'their' amassed 'wealth' (our common resources picked and pocketed and safely deposited into their hidden boxes...) we have a much better understanding of all that is included in the phrase: "the structure of 'class' itself..."

In recent shows we've been trying to grasp how it was that training in obedience came to be viewed as simply a 'mode of thought'... as almost a 'cultural' achievement... an 'evolution of the human' (most egregiously...) also-known-as 'civilization'...

...and this pinpoints... I think... the difficulty we've been having gathering together our ethical resources (globally) and determining to move on... because... as Kropotkin says: "When we have but the will to do it, that very moment will justice be done: that very instant the tyrants of the earth shall bite the dust." (From "An Appeal to the Young")

...a difficulty captured in Kropotkin's use of the word 'tyrant'... because while there's no doubt the word fits for our current crop of 'power'-besotted men... they would deny it... deny that it applies to them... and in truth they are a breed apart from the 'power'-lustful 'kings... priests... and capitalists' (the guys Kropotkin meant by the word 'tyrant'...) of which he wrote – these new 'power'-guys... by going into hiding... by inventing 'child-rearing'... and by using 'Plato' for self-justification and guidance... rewrote the terms of 'the class struggle' such that it gave us no purchase... when we tried to engage... it became our cage... whatever we seized became our own collar and leash... and not enough of us could see that what we were wrestling with was a global system that was totalitarian.

If it sounds contradictory to say both that it is through our open tribes... our associations... that we coalesce into global mobilizations to end the 'class' system... establish our non-coercive alternative... and continuously reproduce it... *and*... that 'the basic unit of political organization is the individual...'

(...even acknowledging Kropotkin's point that we *freely*-associate in our associations... i.e.... that our associations are a collaboration of soul-sufficient beings...)

...it's because we have few models of our collaborative... non-coercive... planning design that most of us can see...

Peter saw it in the Jura Mountains... e.g.... in the craftspeople whose communities dotted it... and of course in the Paris Commune... and although we can point to contemporary instances... moments really... of it in the Egyptian Revolution and its numerous off-spring (including the Occupy Movement...) we haven't yet... as a people... applied the lessons of these examples to a process of thinking and planning globally... for the world we want...

...it seemingly hasn't occurred to us... the truth of what Kropotkin knew so many decades ago: that we already do this... that it is already us that lavishes on the earth our love... it certainly doesn't come from 'the statesmen'... who... raised 'Utilitarian'... have no 'use' for reverence for the earth... have no use... for love... at least not the 'love' we speak of... from 'the people's definitions'...

There is not one square inch of our precious earth that some folk in 'free-association' do not love... and try to take care of... despite...

...despite the 'global-state-statesmen'...

We'll be attempting to synthesize and advance the argument on the 'mode of thought' of 'class' discussed in our September 20, 2015 show... a synthesis applied specifically to our current challenge of 'seeing' the decentralized structure of our global alternative based in non-coercion... freely-developing individualities... soul-sufficiency... and cooperative associations... particularly in light of the current 'crisis'... for 'power' (opportunity for us ...) of insufficient resources to maintain its global hierarchical system... with their tiny souls at the top of the heap... and their butts in the say-so seat. On this last point please

consider this editorial comment from our Kropotkin pdf... a comment in the section excerpting from his essay "An Appeal to Youth":

The pressing quality of the argument Kropotkin is here making [appealing to professors and students to stand with 'the people...'] has not gotten any less so... if anything it seem our crisis of empathy (under 'class') is worsening (so hard to know for certain... when we don't have our own means of discussing these things... our intercommunications being filtered... diluted... and massaged...) the consequence of 'power's intentionally separating and stratifying us... shattering our essential unity. But it didn't look that way... in 1968... a time when young people globally had seen through all the false divisions states use to separate us. Sixty-eight serves as a reminder – of hope for us... of caution for 'power' – that the earth works on us all – calls us to freedom – but especially calls to the youth... so recently sprung from her bowers.

His analysis should... however... be updated to reflect our current situation of 'power's depletion of our common planetary resources... These last three paragraphs are definitely discussion-worthy in this regard... useful... I think... to dispel the fog enshrouding our relations... across the false divisions: the fog of 'economics' – that exists to keep us divided – and useful therefore for the light they shed... by implication... on this current moment of resource-shortages... this moment in the historical-existence of the 'global order' called 'class'... called "end-'power'-game." The illusions... cons... propaganda... the 'global-state-statesmen' promulgate to maintain their 'control' have depended not just on our atomization and hierarchical ordering... i.e.... our separation from... and misconceptions about... each other – on our not meeting each other and as a result then working together... but also on sufficient planetary resources to maintain the stratification... to placate some with better stuff... and cause resentment toward them in the designated 'lessers'. This requirement of their control – that there be 'lessers' – is most critical for those economic areas on the backs of which the weight of the entire system rests: food... water... clothing... and electronic technology... and 'power's 'historical solution': to attempt to make its stratification of us still more rigid through geographical separation: the hierarchical ordering of 'nations' and regions – is becoming expensive. What might be a useful discussion... given this – useful for our planning purposes – would be to consider the implications of the immense environmental and 'economic' crises facing us: the fact that geographic separation presents problems for 'power' right now due to the increasing costs of everything... not the least of which being the 'cost' of we-the-people... ever striving for better lives (and even striving to own our own lives...) at precisely the time when 'power' can least afford to 'give' this – and then... of course... there's the Internet...

[“151213totalitarianmindset_3.mp3”:]

The following points from our September 20, 2015 show on the 'mode of thought' of 'class' bear... I think... on the current planning challenge before us:

“...consider to what degree the maxim “might makes right” expresses utilitarianism... and that both concepts underlie the “separation of 'the self'”... and that... further... in 'dualism' / 'utilitarianism'... is included not just “Might Makes Right”... which implies “conquest” as *raison d'être*... but also: “worth must be 'proven' / 'demonstrated' – and therefore 'performance'... 'abandonment / betrayal' – and the 'scarcity-mindset'... which underlies and... in theory... according to the propagandists... 'justifies' everything that 'power' does...”

“Marx loved freedom... and under 'class'... 'power' has made certain... that 'freedom' is promoted as equivalent to 'freedom to think'... this... is the practical expression of the ideology of 'ancient Greece-elevation'... which 'justifies' abandonment (betrayal) and presents 'necessity' ('scarcity') as 'inevitability' – they erect all the misery they've done... since 'class' begun... on that lie...”

Martin Bernal has shown us how this utilitarian mindset – the mindset of 'making-use-of' the 'natural world... and especially the natural 'material' that is our children and ourselves – was intentionally created and promulgated via 'elite' universities. Alice Miller has shown us how 'power' established this mindset in the children of the 'elite' by means of the child-rearing pedagogues... thereby ensuring its reproduction into the future... hidden under the euphemism 'education'...

But another way of saying this is to say that the utilitarian mindset *masks* 'power'... which has misdirected our young people's energy away from the true culprit... 'power' itself... to themselves. Typically... our children's energies rarely are allowed to view and work with 'the authentic'...

...and recall as we [meet] that we're on the look-out for hidden-'power'... which exists in the creation of 'scarcity' (making us hunger... as Townsend... and Bentham... said...) in the fostering of divisions... in the widening of the gap between 'the elite' and the rest of us (as Popper showed us Plato emphasized...) and in the installation of the 'utilitarian' propaganda – the 'make-use-of-the-natural-world'-mindset (and Martin Bernal has been key in helping us see that... as well as Alice Miller...)

Is it clear that in the above... we're but naming the same item – again and again – from slightly different perspectives?... that the 'reality' we're given is totalitarian?...

The 'power'-guys have been working apace in the decades since the French Revolution... to instigate a massive 'cultural' shift – in truth the kiss of death for 'culture' in any authentic sense – such that we would see this 'mindset' of utilitarianism... authoritarianism... subjection of self to 'Authority'... as 'modern'... as an 'advance' over 'barbarism'... as representative of 'Progress'... in order to silence the authentic voice of the earth... the earth in us... the voice calling us to our authentic allegiance: to her... to our Brothers and Sisters... and to the ancestors who dedicated themselves tirelessly to helping us see... our inherent freedom...

[“151213practicingsoulsuff_4.mp3”:]

As the pressure from 'power' against us increases in intensity... we embrace our fluidity... individually... tribally... inter-regionally... inter-nationally. Though the individual is the basic unit of our ('political') organization for... and in... freedom... we respond to... and respect... each other: we think through as individuals what makes sense for the application of our energy... and then we follow through.

Utah Phillips used to say (I paraphrase) that having identifiable 'leaders' was a fool's 'tactic'... it meant that when that person... those people... got arrested... the mobilization... whatever it was about originally... became a defense committee to get them out of jail. Obviously... 'power' is willing to play that game with us *ad infinitum*. But his object-lesson also means... not only “no leaders”... but... “no defense committees...” – only individual acts of conscience or love... supporting the people we love... when we are moved to – but... no taking our eyes off the prize.

Three prizes.

'Utilitarianism' is totalitarian... but 'the principle of utility' (that one that Bentham so loved...) has no allegiance to any particular political cause – it is a key principle of strategy – it simply means that we have thought through the chain of steps... that lead from any particular act... to our intended... ultimate... effect.

Three effects:

- An annual (to coincide with May Day seems best... doing so saves time discussing it...) One-Day-Global-General-Strike – to roll into a series of such when the time is right...
- Continuous key (suppressed) conversations – perhaps using our “Reflections of '3.7'” as guide...) with the broader community...
- Regaining our 'will': practicing soul-sufficiency...

...this last is a bigger deal that we've heretofore credited it as being... because up to now we haven't made conscious and discussed child-rearing as 'power's key political strategy... Alice is helping us see the degree to which 'obedience' – submission to Authority – has been trained into each one of us (under 'class'...) So we'll have to get creative in unlearning it... and ask for the support of our 'cores'... our 'heart' – our collective 'selves' – to accomplish it. Possible things to try: role-playing – i.e.... putting into our bodies the feeling of staying centered when pit-bull-agents confront us...; 'making' (and this could be represented in many ways...) that 'inner empathic object' that we are determined to defend against all incursions against it (and it is true... it feels like that... once you create yourself... which is reclaiming yourself... you're protective of it... that's what she means when she says “would not let it go for any price...”); sharing our stories with our 'cores' at times set aside for doing this... But your creativity shines way further than I can see... for coming up with more...

All of the above minimizes the opportunities for agents to unsettle us... unseat us.

But I suspect that nothing will help so much as our group discussions of Alice. Points she will make today we first encountered in this space on May 18, 2014... in which we asked: “if we can see how our training (in what gets ‘seen’... recognized... given attention... rewarded...) gets translated into ‘reality’ – the belief that “only ‘mind’ matters” – would that not help us to become more conscious authors of our own lives?...” Please listen again to that excerpt... I’ve posted it to the ‘Blog’ page with the “Understanding Feelings” pdf:

“140518selfbetrayal.mp3”: Alice Miller: “...Where are the standards supposed to come from if someone has always been told what was right and what was wrong and if he never had an opportunity to become familiar with his own feelings and if, beyond that, attempts at criticism were unacceptable to the parents and thus were too threatening for the child? If an adult has not developed a mind of his own, then he will find himself at the mercy of the authorities for better or worse, just as an infant finds itself at the mercy of its parents. Saying no to those more powerful will always seem too threatening to him.... Individuals who refuse to adapt to a totalitarian regime are not doing so out of a sense of duty or because of naïveté, but because they cannot help but be true to themselves...” [From our May 18, 2014 radio broadcast.]

—

[“151213noinevitability_5.mp3”:]

“Reflections of ‘3.7’: the September 20, 2015 Show”:

But if the problem is... that we-the-people don’t make the definitions... because we’re kept separate... and so we’ve never thought about it... and because there is suppression of key conversations... about ‘class’ being global and so totalitarian... and about the existence of an obvious and viable alternative... in our world based in non-coercion...

(...and that there are conscious hidden actors behind this suppression... behind the illusion...)

...and that there are conscious actors who stay hidden...

(...who control the lexicon to ensure they can ‘govern’ us...)

So... if we’re given our meanings... made ‘subjects’... but... without seeing the one who’s doing it... such that... ours ‘selves’ are lost... but there seems no cause but us... then... it’s a question... isn’t it: “who are we?”

(Clearly... if the world is [literally] a stage... we are [literally] only actors... performers for the Director of this tragedy...)

...*not* ‘tragedy’... no... there is no ‘inevitability’...

—

[“151213splittingoffproj_6.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

[The child-rearing we receive under ‘class’ is a many-sided thing... sides that are but facets of a single utilitarian / totalitarian ideology... Recalling what Alice said last week – that we don’t question that which is a continuation of childhood – it’s easy to understand how it has been that we’ve allowed ‘power’ to use us without our protest... Just the opposite... in fact... is what ‘power’ hopes... ‘just the opposite’ is key to its m.o.: their intention being that when we are confronted with an authoritarian figure (and ultimately their plan was to condition us to accept... as we have done in the past... a dictator – to pound us into a softer material... easier to control... shape... and manipulate...) that when confronted with an authoritarian figure we would unconsciously re-experience our childhood: i.e. that they could continuously re-stimulate our submission to ‘father’-authority – that a command would serve as a trigger for an obedient response. But as Alice has said... once the ‘power’-game becomes visible to us... once we become conscious of it... we have other options... – which explains why ‘power’ is so threatened by Alice (that and the fact that she completely exposes the infantilism which underlies totalitarian ideology – whether it be of Plato or Hitler – the infantilism in total subjection of self to ‘Authority’... – P.S.)

The Central Mechanism of “Poisonous Pedagogy”: Splitting Off and Projection

In 1943, Himmler gave his famous Posen Address, in which he, in the name of the German people, expressed his appreciation to the SS group leaders for their role in the extermination of the Jews. I shall quote here the part of his speech that finally enabled me, in 1979, to comprehend something for which I had been vainly seeking a psychological explanation for thirty years [thirty years she labored... and more... we are so good... so good... Thank you Alice... – P.S.].

I shall speak to you here with all frankness about a very serious subject. We shall now discuss it absolutely openly among ourselves, nevertheless we shall never speak of it in public. I mean the evacuation of the Jews, the extermination of the Jewish people. It is one of those things which is easy to say: “The Jewish people are to be exterminated,” says every party member. “That’s clear, it’s part of our program, elimination of the Jews, extermination, right, we’ll do it.” And then they all come along, the eighty million upstanding Germans, and each one has his decent Jew. Of course the others are swine, but this one is a first-class Jew. Of all those who talk like this, not one has watched [the actual extermination], not one has had the stomach for it. Most of you know what it means to see a hundred corpses lying together, five hundred, or a thousand. To have gone through this and yet – apart from a few exceptions, examples of human weakness – to have remained decent, this has made us hard. This is a glorious page in our history that has never been written and never shall be written.

The wealth which they [the Jews] had, we have taken from them. I have issued a strict command... that this wealth is as a matter of course to be delivered in its entirety to the Reich. We have taken none of it for ourselves. Individuals who have violated this principle will be punished according to an order which I issued at the beginning and which warns: Anyone who takes so much as a mark shall die. A certain number of SS men – not very many – disobeyed this order and they will die, without mercy. We had the moral right, we had the duty to our own people, to kill this people that wanted to kill us. But we have no right to enrich ourselves by so much as a fur, a watch, a mark, or a cigarette, or anything else. In the last analysis, because we exterminated a bacillus we don’t want to be infected by it and die. I shall never stand by and watch even the slightest spot of rot develop or establish itself here. Wherever it appears, we shall burn it out together. By and large, however, we can say that we have performed this most difficult task out of love for our people. And we have suffered no harm from it in our inner self, in our soul, in our character. [Quoted by Fest]

This speech contains all the elements of the complicated psychodynamic mechanism that can be described as splitting off and projection of parts of the self, which we encounter so often in the manuals of “poisonous pedagogy.” Schooling oneself to be senselessly hard requires that all signs of weakness [*apparent* weakness... – P.S.] in oneself (including emotionalism, tears, pity, sympathy for oneself and others, and feelings of helplessness, fear and despair) be suppressed “without mercy.” In order to make the struggle against these humane impulses easier, the citizens of the Third Reich were offered an object to serve as the bearer of all these qualities that were abhorred because they had been forbidden and dangerous in their childhood – this object was the Jewish people. Freed from their “bad” (i.e., weak and uncontrolled) feelings, so-called Aryans could feel pure, strong, hard, clean, good, unambivalent, and morally right if everything they had feared in themselves since childhood could be attributed to the Jews and if, together with their fellow Germans, these “Aryans” were not only permitted but required to combat it relentlessly and ever anew among members of this “inferior race.”

[“151213noinnerlife_7.mp3”:]

It seems to me that we are still threatened by the possible repetition of a similar crime unless we understand its origins and the psychological mechanism behind it. [And is there any doubt at all that she’s not only right... but that the threat never left for an instant since... and that the lack of any global-society-wide process of doing precisely what she calls for: understanding the origins and psychological mechanism behind totalitarianism... rather... in fact... the opposite has been the case... there has been suppression... ‘proves’ that ‘rule’ is continuously engaged in suppression of this knowledge... and reproducing the conditions for... its ‘working out’ of its ‘abandonment issues’ – using us as object – through its massive misanthropic crimes... – P.S.]

The more insight I gained into the dynamics of perversion through my analytic work, the more I questioned the view advanced repeatedly since the end of the war that a handful of perverted people were responsible for the Holocaust. [This has been the sole view of the event that has been allowed to exist... over the generations... – P.S.] The mass murderers showed not a trace of the specific symptoms of perversion, such as isolation, loneliness, shame, and despair; they were not isolated but belonged to

a supportive group [that... clearly... is key... and clearly what I see in those duped trained child-brides of Plato's Tribe... – P.S.]; they were not ashamed but proud; and they were not despairing but either euphoric or apathetic.

The other explanation – that these were people who worshipped authority and were accustomed to obey – is not wrong, but neither is it adequate to explain a phenomenon like the Holocaust, if by obeying we mean the carrying out of commands that we consciously regard as being forced upon us.

People with any sensitivity cannot be turned into mass murderers overnight. But the men and women who carried out “the final solution” did not let their feelings stand in their way for the simple reason that they had been raised from infancy not to have any feelings of their own. These were people who, as children, had been proud of being tough and not crying, of carrying out all their duties “gladly,” of not being afraid – that is, at bottom, of not having an inner life at all.

[“151213adaptationtosoulloss_8.mp3”:]

In *A Sorrow Beyond Dreams* Peter Handke describes his mother, who committed suicide at the age of fifty-one. His pity and concern for her permeate the book and help the reader understand why her son searches so desperately for his “true feelings” (*A Moment of True Feeling* is the title of another Handke book) in all his works. Somewhere in the graveyard of his childhood he had to bury the roots of these feelings in order to spare his unstable mother in difficult times. Handke depicts the atmosphere of the village in which he grew up:

No one had anything to say about himself; even in church, at Easter confession, when at least once a year there was an opportunity to reveal something of oneself, there was only a mumbling of catchwords out of the catechism, and the word “I” seemed stranger to the speaker himself than a chunk out of the moon. If in talking about himself anyone went beyond relating some droll incident, he was said to be “peculiar.” Personal life, if it had ever developed a character of its own was depersonalized except for dream tatters swallowed up by the rites of religion, custom, and good manners; little remained of the human individual, and indeed, the word “individual” was known only as a pejorative....

All spontaneity... was frowned upon as something deplorable.... Cheated out of your own biography and feelings, you gradually become “skittish,” as is usually said only of domesticated animals – horses, for example; you shied away from people, stopped talking, or, more seriously deranged, went from house to house, screaming.

Lack of feeling as an ideal manifested itself in many modern writers until approximately 1975 as well as in the geometric trend in painting. In Karin Struck's *Klassenliebe (Class Love)* (1973), we read:

Dietger can't cry. He was terribly upset by his grandma's death; he loved his grandma deeply. On the way back from the burial service, he said, I'm trying to decide if I should squeeze out a few tears – squeeze out, he said.... Dietger says, I don't need to have dreams. Dietger is proud of the fact that he doesn't dream. He says, I never dream, I sleep soundly. Jutta says Dietger is denying his unconscious perceptions and feelings as well as his dreams.

Dietger is a postwar child. And what feelings did Dietger's parents have? Little is known about that, for their generation was allowed to express its true feelings even less than the present one.

In *Suchbild*, Christoph Meckel quotes from the journal kept by his father, a poet and writer, during World War II:

A woman in my compartment on the train... is telling... about the... Germans' business dealings everywhere in the government. Bribery, high prices, and the like, and about the concentration camp in Auschwitz, etc. – As a soldier, you are so far removed from these things, which really don't interest you at all; you represent an entirely different Germany out there and you aren't looking for personal gain from the war but just want to keep a clear conscience. I have nothing but scorn for this civilian rubbish. Maybe I'm stupid, but soldiers are always the stupid ones who have to pay. At least we have a sense of honor, and no one can take that away from us. (1/24/44)

On a roundabout way to have lunch I witnessed the public shooting of twenty-eight Poles on the edge of a playing field. Thousands line the streets and the river. A ghastly pile of corpses, all in all horrifying and ugly and yet a sight that leaves me altogether cold. The men who were shot had ambushed two soldiers and a German civilian and killed them. An exemplary modern folk-drama. (1/27/44)

Once feelings have been eliminated, the submissive person functions perfectly and reliably even if he knows no one is going to check up on him:

I agree to see a colonel who wants something from me, and then he gets out of the car and approaches. With the help of a first lieutenant speaking broken German, he complains that it's not right to let them go for five days with almost no bread. I reply that it's not right for an officer to be a follower of Badoglio and am very curt. For another group of officers said to be Fascists, who thrust all kinds of papers at me, I have the car heated and am more polite. (10/27/43)

This perfect adaptation to society's norms [which... in our May 18, 2014 show we referred to as 'self-betrayal' (in that audio-file mentioned earlier that we posted to the 'Blog' page...) because it is from this angle... perhaps... that we can best see empathy's absence – and we've posted now with it the follow-up discussion from the next show (“140525scholarship.mp3”) on the relationship between 'scholarship' and 'betrayal'... – P.S.] This perfect adaptation to society's norms – in other words, to what is called “healthy normality” – carries with it the danger that such a person can be used for practically any purpose. It is not a loss of autonomy that occurs here, because this autonomy never existed, but a switching of values, which in themselves are of no importance anyway for the person in question as long as his whole value system is dominated by the principle of obedience. He had never gone beyond the stage of idealizing his parents with their demands for unquestioning obedience; this idealization can easily be transferred to a Führer or to an ideology. Since authoritarian parents are always right, there is no need for their children to rack their brains in each case to determine whether what is demanded of them is right or not. And how is this to be judged? Where are the standards supposed to come from if someone has always been told what was right and what was wrong and if he never had an opportunity to become familiar with his own feelings and if, beyond that, attempts at criticism were unacceptable to the parents and thus were too threatening for the child? If an adult has not developed a mind of his own, then he will find himself at the mercy of the authorities for better or worse, just as an infant finds itself at the mercy of its parents. Saying no to those more powerful will always seem too threatening to him.

Witnesses of sudden political upheavals report again and again with what astonishing facility many people are able to adapt to a new situation. Overnight they can advocate views totally different from those they held the day before – without noticing the contradiction. With the change in the power structure, yesterday has completely disappeared for them.

And yet, even if this observation should apply to many – perhaps even to most – people [under 'class'... – P.S.], it is not true for everyone. There have always been individuals who refused to be reprogrammed quickly, if ever. We could use our psychoanalytic knowledge to address the question of what causes this important, even crucial, difference; with its aid, we could attempt to discover why some people are so extraordinarily susceptible to the dictates of leaders and groups and why others remain immune to these influences.

[“151213spontaneousfeelings_9.mp3”:]

We admire people who oppose the regime in a totalitarian country and think they have courage or a “strong moral sense” or have remained “true to their principles” or the like. We may also smile at their naïveté, thinking, “Don't they realize that their words are of no use at all against this oppressive power? That they will have to pay dearly for their protest?”

Yet it is possible that both those who admire and those who scorn these protestors are missing the real point: individuals who refuse to adapt to a totalitarian regime are not doing so out of a sense of duty or because of naïveté, but because they cannot help but be true to themselves. The longer I wrestle with these questions, the more I am inclined to see courage, integrity, and a capacity for love, not as “virtues,” not as moral categories, but as the consequences of a benign fate.

Morality and performance of duty are artificial measures that become necessary when something essential is lacking. The more successfully a person was denied access to his or her feelings in childhood, the larger the arsenal of intellectual weapons and the supply of moral prostheses has to be, because morality and a sense of duty are not sources of strength or fruitful soil for genuine affection. Blood does not flow in artificial limbs; they are for sale and can serve many masters. What was considered good yesterday can – depending on the decree of government or party – be considered evil and corrupt today, and vice versa. But those who have spontaneous feelings can only be themselves. They have no other choice if they want to remain true to themselves. Rejection, ostracism, loss of love, and name calling will not fail to affect them; they will suffer as a result and will dread them, but once they have found their authentic self they will not want to lose it. And when they sense that something is being demanded of them to which their whole being says no, they cannot do it. They simply cannot.

This is the case with people who had the good fortune of being sure of their parents' love even if they had to disappoint certain parental expectations. Or with people who, although they did not have this good fortune to begin with, learned later – for example, in analysis – to risk the loss of love in order to regain their lost self. They will not be willing to relinquish it again for any price in the world.

[And that is why our movement to freedom must be composed of souls that are sufficient... – P.S.]

[The December 13, 2015 show ends here.]

The December 20, 2015 show – themes and things: “...reconceiving our 'economic' allegiance...” and... “...redefining 'Progress'...” and... “...owning our own spontaneous feelings...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 6... pages 39 – 46)

[“151220hateaintprogress_1.mp3”:]

(I just turned on the mic which makes me wonder if my comment about the first song wasn't heard [in our “Love Triumphs Over Global 'Power' musical tribute.] In case it was not... I played... as the first song... “Baby I'm A Star” by Prince... and said that that was dedicated to all the child-brides of Plato's Tribe out there... and encouraged them to listen to it again and again until they could *feel* it [as they are trained to believe that they are nothing and “the state' is all...”] because Alice told us that these Plato's Tribesmen *hate* soul-sufficient self-expression... and I said that I suspect that that song alone was enough to get Prince targeted. [Prince was killed on April 21, 2016 – a true Prince... as opposed to the 'original' of all the false 'princes': Plato.. The torture over several decades and eventual murder of Prince is discussed in our April 24, 2016 through our May, 2016 shows... and referred to in subsequent shows... (I will have to re-do the page references in the 'Contents' after this post-show comment. Thanks for your patience.)]

December 15, 2015... Sisters and Brothers: In this week's show we return to this matter of our cultivating a new 'economic' allegiance... using our definition of 'economic': 'suppressed creative expression flowering'... and our on-going need to create and use a language between us that reinforces our right to an authentic Freedom – i.e. based in individual self-sufficiency... which means “no masters”. We will be arguing that the road to this accomplishment is through owning our own spontaneous feelings.

In anticipation of this discussion... I've both typed up more Kropotkin... begun incorporating his essay “Anarchism” into the pdf – so please look for it – and posted this excerpt from the February 8, 2015 show to the two pages that hold the audio-files for these shows [“Missing Audio Files” and “Raise Up Love Shows Audio”...] with the heading “Preparation for the December 15 show”:

[The following audio-comment discusses a section of the chapter, “Progress” in *Waking Up*:

“150208progress.mp3”: “The lost child is the source of our troubles... [And... thanks to John Boswell's *The Kindness of Strangers: Child Abandonment in Europe from Late Antiquity Through the Renaissance*... we understand now how this happened... That is an important book. If you get a chance... I hope you'll read it... or bits of it... and that you'll try to feel it... if you know what I mean... feel the full implications of that – thousands of years of child abandonment – and how that gets embedded in what people think is part of being 'human'... but isn't... It's like Kropotkin telling us that in ancient texts gorillas were described as 'gregarious'... breaks your heart to think about that... how much damage has been inflicted... on life – we are not yet what we're meant to be... but we will recover all that was stolen from us by this sick system of rigid hierarchical rule.] It's time for us to heal the hurt, complete the circuit – return home. We have nothing now but our imaginations and our biological memory, but that's enough for the task at hand, which is reunion...” [From our February 8, 2015 radio broadcast.]

Listening to it again I would make a correction... I would write this differently::

We are capable of investigating the world from a stance of unity, without linking that inquiry to a bunch of fanciful notions about 'Thought realizing Itself,' and some people being 'good' because they help 'Thought realize itself and other peoples being 'bad' because they don't represent 'Thought,' or some such bullshit... Let's start telling ourselves a different story – *if only out of solidarity*, out of a need to grow together rather than in opposition... The alternative [explanation for 'class'] can be summed up in three words: "misery loves company." Some really, really unhappy people with big gaping holes in their souls, "under the pressure of necessity, resorted to violence." They set out on an endless mission to try to fill these holes with material stuff. The sight of happy people drove them mad and they set about trying to destroy their happiness as thoroughly as possible. From Necessity in the human story the road led to Child Abandonment and Violence, and then onward to Hierarchy and Passive Obedience.

Today... with the benefit of Alice Miller... and Karl Popper... and John Boswell... and Martin Bernal et al.... we can see that it was not the "pressure of 'Necessity'" that drove the (what would eventually become) 'Plato's Tribesmen' to unleash their hate on us... rather it was... base and corrupt... child abandonment – these Tiny Few who plague us today are the progeny of the oblates John Boswell writes of... the abandoned children of the abandoned children of 'princes'... who were mis-guided by that 'original' of the 'global-state-statesman': Plato.

[“151220thefallguysOfClass_2.mp3”:]

In that February 8, 2015 show... where we read the section of the chapter “Progress” of *Waking Up* just mentioned... I said that we – we-the-people – are the only legitimate authors of the story of 'Progress'... the only ones who should determine its needed content... and that I believe... with Kropotkin – and Nikola Tesla... and all folks of good heart – that 'progress' lies in our authentic unity... the authentic unity of all human beings... i.e.... a unity 'based in individual self-sufficiency' – and that to think these necessary thoughts (necessary for advancing the species to freedom...) we need to discuss... essentially... the story of 'class'... such that we understand its hierarchy and division and compartmentalization accurately... and can challenge 'power's story that it is the 'inevitability' of 'necessity' and 'scarcity' – and 'our' inherent greed' (as opposed to their greed... lust... for 'power' – that (supposedly) makes our unity as human beings an 'unattainable dream'. That we are essentially the same... all made of the same 'stuff'... that we are all good... and want the same things out of life... is never acknowledged...

...it especially never comes up when the 'power'-vetted media brings out its pundits to 'analyze' the 'geopolitical scene'... or 'national security'... or the 'weapons systems' that DARPA is developing.

(And who are the targets these weapons are designed to be used against ultimately... if not us?... Especially now that we are in the time of manufactured resource-shortages... and calculated depletion... it is the 'domestic theater' that looms large in the militaristic ambitions of global-state-statesmen...

...and let's not forget that the police are designed to be the 'fall-guys'... I thought about this when I realized... contrary to what I'd assumed initially... that the police were ignorant about the EMF-assault on me... I'd thought the opposite at first because it was from someone in a police lock-up – an 'Occupy' protester I believe... who wrote about it – that I learned to use garlic to recover... and now my extensive experience of being targeted and hit from some distance above... showed me that detained folks can be 'punished' – and let's not forget 'punishing' is 'power's m.o. – and the police never know... though in the minds of detainees hit... it will seem as if the police are the cause of it...)

[“151220authenticThoughtPath_3.mp3”:]

Not only is 'progress' in our... authentic... sense never discussed... but rather... the assumption is that 'our' divisiveness' is endless. It's as if Göering never uttered these words (from his jail cell) for all of us to contemplate:

Göering: Why, of course, the people don't want war. Why would some poor slob on a farm want to risk his life in a war when the best that he can get out of it is to come back to his farm in one piece? Naturally, the common people don't want war; neither in Russia nor in England nor in America, nor for that matter in Germany. That is understood. But, after all, it is the leaders of the country who determine the policy and it is always a simple matter to drag the people along, whether it is a democracy or a fascist dictatorship or a Parliament or a Communist dictatorship.

Gilbert: There is one difference. In a democracy, the people have some say in the matter through their elected representatives, and in the United States only Congress can declare wars.

Göring: Oh, that is all well and good, but, voice or no voice, the people can always be brought to the bidding of the leaders. That is easy. All you have to do is tell them they are being attacked and denounce the pacifists for lack of patriotism and exposing the country to danger. It works the same way in any country. (Hermann Göring in an interview with Gilbert in Göring's jail cell during the Nuremberg War Crimes Trials (18 April 1946, from *Wikiquote*)

In our August 3, 2014 broadcast... when we first considered those words of Göring's... we said that we can no longer tolerate the illusion that we can sanguinely vest our power in states... Today I would say that we have never been 'sanguine' about accepting this rotten deal... rather... we simply didn't know what else to do... overwhelmed as we've been by the totalitarian *structure* of 'class'... with its threads insinuated into all aspects of our lives... though this feeling has mostly been an *unconscious* sense... prevented as we've been from discussing it...

...and... moreover... as we've not had the language to discuss it in... not had our own definitions...

...and beyond this... as we've been silenced... and intentionally so... by the 'power'-constructed language of 'economics' (the subject of our June 1, 2014 show...) which took our words from us... leaving us deeply silent... or... finding that if we wanted to 'speak' we had to use *its* language...

What we're asking of Alice is: "What is the route... or what are the routes... to 'recovery' – of 'authenticity'... of spontaneous feelings... of 'voice'?... Could one route be... the debunking of the con 'economics'? And to help us with this question... please listen again to this excerpt – from our June 1, 2014 show (it is posted to both web pages that hold the audio for these shows:)

"140601alice1.mp3": "Economics' is a tool for conquering language. So the problem is bigger than it seems... particularly as we're never allowed to see it... When Bentham tells the 'philosopher-king-global statesmen': "He who defined the language ruled the universe..." we haven't appreciated – because we're not encouraged to think the thought – that this is quite literally true... that as "creatures of illusion" we are made of words... sculpted with words... invented... designed... with words. Which makes their use... a sacred trust... a bond... between humans... not to abuse it... and 'abuse it' the so-called 'rulers' have done... without cessation... from "Day 'One'"... since 'class' was begun... by 'philosopher-king-statesmen'. And what are these words we're ruled with if not versions of 'be productive'... 'be useful'... 'be good'... 'be obedient'... and when these words oppose the body... we're told... "the body is wrong... and must be governed..." and thus begins our training in 'management'... in 'utilitarianism'... in 'economics' – the world-view we're all trained in... is designed not for us... but to facilitate the use of us by... to convert us into resources for... the statesmen. So how are we supposed to enter into... authentic discussions of our future... when authentic thought is not allowed to exist?" [From our June 1, 2014 radio broadcast.]

We asked... "how are we supposed to enter into... authentic discussions of our future... when authentic thought is not allowed to exist?"...

...and today we ask the question this way: "Is authentic thought a route to the recovery of our spontaneous feelings?"

...and then: once authentic thought flows... as our recovered language grows... and as we find our 'tribes'... and start the necessary conversations... once our discontent becomes conscious... because we have an adequate language for it... and so an adequate understanding of it... and we pool our resources... will we discover that Shakespeare is correct... that "all difficulties are but easy... when they are known..."

...and that heart... and faith... are sufficient... to meet this challenge facing us... as global humans...

["151220creativeelementroute_4.mp3":]

Sisters and Brothers: What do we think... given what we've learned from Wallerstein... Alice Miller et al... of this argument from John Stuart Mill:

No government can now expect to be permanent unless it guarantees progress as well as order; nor can it continue really to secure order, unless it promotes progress. It can go on as yet, with only a little of the spirit of improvement; while reformers have even a remote hope of effecting their objects through the existing system, they are generally willing to bear with it. But when there is no hope at all; when the institutions themselves seem to oppose an unyielding barrier to the program of improvement, the advance of tide heaps itself up behind them till it bears them down. (John Stuart Mill, quoted in Immanuel Wallerstein's *The Modern World-System IV: Centrist Liberalism Triumphant, 1789 – 1914*, p. 89, discussed in our *Waking Up Radio* show of November 1, 2015)

...particularly in light of Wallerstein's comment:

The tide – that is, the European revolution of 1848 – as all such great happenings, was made up of a mixture of movements and objectives. In France, it consisted essentially of the joining together of Europe's 'first great proletarian insurrection' (Tilly, 1971, 228) with the acute discontent of the left liberals who shared John Stuart Mill's view of the conservatization of the July Monarch... The uprising of February 1848 illuminated the hopes of a 'social republic,' a vague socialist utopia that would provide jobs to the unemployed and liberation to all those who suffered indignities and inequalities. Everyone put forward their claims: the "artisans," who sought to restore their privileges and their mode of production; the peasants, who sought to reestablish traditional rights of collective usage; the women, who sought the extension of "universal" suffrage to include them; the slaves, who sought abolition. The pendulum was beginning to swing too far, and in June the forces of order under General Cavaignac reined in the unruly dangerous classes. "Pitiful provisional government!" cried Labrousse (1948,2) "It feared the social revolution as much as it did the counter-revolution."

Cavaignac could repress; he could not re-legitimize the state. Nor could the monarchs return; they had exhausted their credit. Into this void stepped Louis Napoleon, who sought to re-create a liberal, orderly, modern state... When Louis Napoleon made his coup d'etat on December 2, 1851, the primary objective was to repress the left... the outcome of the repression, which was both real and effective, was that of a centrist regime, oriented to capitalist expansion, constructing a liberal compromise – one led not by a classical liberal but by an enlightened conservative.

One thing it suggests is a 'creative element' that has been suppressed...

(...recall that in a previous show we discussed Antonio Gramsci's speculation (in *Prison Notebooks*...) that 'revolution' must come [given... though he didn't put it like this... the 'totalitarian' nature of the 'capitalist' system: the State reflecting and manifesting the 'logic' of 'capital'... and vice versa...] must come from an 'economic element' that has been suppressed rising up... that flowed as a wave across states... unifying folk behind... in the same way as did the French Revolution... behind the expression of that suppressed creative element...

...and we are arguing that it is *our* creativity... our life-force... that has been *hidden* in the concepts of... and the term... 'economics'...

...and that has robbed us of speech because we haven't found a way to express what we really need... what we are...

...and we're going to keep exploring this notion until it's clearer... I've been struggling with the fact that Alice herself is struggling with how to help folk recover the authentic self... those suppressed feelings... and her frame... her realm... is psychology... psychoanalysis... and so her methodology is in large part sort of "each one teach one... one soul at a time..." and we are in such a crisis right now... with 'power' rushing to establish more hard-core totalitarianism... and because my route was not that route I've been struggling with trying to understand the relationship – my route was not therapy... and despite reading Alice when my son was a baby... and despite knowing... and feeling... the truth of it... the sheer power of the totalitarian reality of 'class'... the need to support oneself... the need to exist... to live... overwhelmed any knowledge of what I needed to be doing with my son... I couldn't *deeply* ponder her words... that took other things... So... with me... I'm hoping everyone is pondering this deeply: strategies for working with ourselves and our Brothers and Sisters to release those suppressed spontaneous feelings.)

["151220visionofkropotkin_5.mp3":]

One thing it suggests is a 'creative element' that has been suppressed... and another... implied by the Wallerstein comment... is that 'statesmen'... following Louis' lead... realized they must be the ones to tell us what is 'progress'... and what isn't... though we would reject their 'lessons' for several generations... It was not easy for 'power' to overcome the vision of Kropotkin:

Anarchism (from the Greek 'an', and 'arkhos', contrary to authority), is the name given to a principle or theory of life and conduct under which society is conceived without government – harmony in such a society being obtained, not by submission to law, or by obedience to any authority, but by free agreements concluded between the various groups, territorial and professional, freely constituted for the sake of production and consumption, as also for the satisfaction of the infinite variety of needs and aspirations of a civilized being.

In a society developed along these lines, the voluntary associations which already now begin to cover all the fields of human activity would take a still greater extension so as to substitute themselves for the State in all its functions. They would represent an interwoven network, composed of an infinite variety of groups and federations of all sizes and degrees, local, regional, national, and international – temporary or more or less permanent – for all possible purposes: production, consumption and exchange, communications, sanitary arrangements, education, mutual protection, defense of the territory, and so on; and, on the other side, for the satisfaction of an ever-increasing number of scientific, artistic, literary and sociable needs....

If, it is contended, society were organized on these principles, man would not be limited in the free exercise of his powers in productive work by a capitalist monopoly, maintained by the State; nor would he be limited in the exercise of his will by a fear of punishment, or by obedience towards individuals or metaphysical entities, which both lead to depression of initiative and servility of mind. He would be guided in his actions by his own understanding, which necessarily would bear the impression of a free action and reaction between his own self and the ethical conceptions of his surroundings. Man would thus be enabled to obtain the full development of all his faculties, intellectual, artistic and moral, without being hampered by overwork for the monopolists, or by the servility and inertia of mind of the great number. He would thus be able to reach full *individualization*, which is not possible either under the present system of *individualism*, or under any system of State socialism in the so-called *Volkstaat* (popular State)....

As to their economical conceptions, the anarchists, in common with all socialists, of whom they constitute the left wing, maintain that the now prevailing system of private ownership in land, and our capitalist production for the sake of profits, represent a monopoly which runs against both the principles of justice and the dictates of utility. They are the main obstacle which prevents the successes of modern technics from being brought into the service of all, so as to produce general well-being. The anarchists consider the wage-system and capitalist production altogether as an obstacle to progress. But they point out also that the State was, and continues to be, the chief instrument for permitting the few to monopolize the land, and the capitalists to appropriate for themselves a quite disproportionate share of the yearly accumulated surplus of production. [And I would add... allow the 'capitalists' to 'appropriate'... to privatize... the entire earth... and we have been arguing in these spaces... that that is... in fact... their 'purpose' in the schema of the Plato's Tribesmen... from the perspective of global-'power': is to remove the resources of the earth... our common treasure... into private hands... that is what was accomplished by 'capitalism'... – 'was'... past-tense... being the operative word – “was accomplished”... 'power' is now ready to move on to... what they consider to be... the 'next and higher stage': “we on 'permanent-lock-down-can't-get-out' called global totalitarianism”... which we already have... but with a 'friendlier' face (which is more expensive to maintain...) for those in the more privileged place in the hierarchy of states... – P.S.] Consequently, while combating the present monopolization of land, and capitalism altogether, the anarchists combat with the same energy the State as the main support of that system. Not this or that special form, but the State altogether, whether it be a monarchy or even a republic governed by means of the *referendum*. [One of the major analytical advantages – the better vintage – we possess today is our understanding... thanks to Alice Miller particularly... but also to Jeremy Bentham as well... is our understanding of how 'the state' exists in our training to be obedient – work done by the parent on behalf of 'the system' – the implication of this being... for the argument being made here by Kropotkin... that our accelerated evolution today (thanks to the Internet... the means to further the discussions 'power' has systematically suppressed...) based as it is in our consciously grasping the full extent of the disaster called 'class'... and determining to end it... and together globally embrace our freedom... means this evolution is qualitatively different from any other that went before it – which Kropotkin acknowledges implicitly by using the term 'individualization'... i.e.... the process of our negating 'class' and becoming 'soul-sufficient'... through the mutual development of our earth-given gifts... in cooperative association... – P.S.]

[“151220visionofkropotkinpr2_6.mp3”:]

The State organization, having always been, both in ancient and modern history (Macedonian empire... Roman empire, modern European states grown up on the ruins of the autonomous cities), the instrument for establishing monopolies in favor of the ruling minorities, cannot be made to work for the destruction of these monopolies. The anarchists consider, therefore, that to hand over to the State all the main sources of economic life – the land, the mines, the railways, banking, insurance, and so on – as also the management of all the main branches of industry, in addition to all the functions already accumulated in its hands (education, State-supported religions, defense of the territory [it's likely he did not see... as he was living in its inception... the global ambition of the just-solidifying Plato's Tribesmen... their determination to solve 'Plato's Dilemma' of the unsettling effect of 'imperialism'... 'outsiders' coming in and upsetting 'the children' (which we all are until we end the 'class'-system...) – of the Republic... – P.S.], etc.) ...the anarchists consider, therefore, that to hand over to the State all the main sources of economic life would mean to create a new instrument of tyranny. State capitalism would only increase the powers of bureaucracy and capitalism. True progress lies in the direction of decentralization, both *territorial* and *functional*, in the development of the spirit of local and personal initiative, and of free federation from the simple to the compound, *in lieu* of the present hierarchy from the center to the periphery.

In common with most socialists, the anarchists recognize that, like all evolution in nature, the slow evolution of society is followed from time to time by periods of accelerated evolution which are called revolutions; and they think that the era of revolutions is not yet closed. Periods of rapid changes will follow the periods of slow evolution, and these periods must be taken advantage of – not for increasing and widening the powers of the State [which is exactly what happened... the challenge before us... is to... just as Kropotkin says... reincorporate those powers into ourselves... and reproduce our lives *for ourselves*... without any masters... – P.S.], but for reducing them, through the organization in every township or commune of the local groups of producers and consumers, as also the regional, and eventually the international, federations of these groups.

In virtue of the above principles the anarchists refuse to be party to the present-State organization and to support it by infusing fresh blood into it [a *most* important point... and so much more difficult to achieve... we can see today... with our expanded perspective... as we know we are wrestling with a hidden-State – not only with global-state-statesmen-in-hiding... but with that hidden-State within ourselves... requiring the insights and guidance of Alice Miller to begin even contemplating its accomplishment – that 'refusal' – and then... to establish the material... the community... support... that would sustain that refusal – that is the subject of our December 20, 2015 show... – P.S.]. They do not seek to constitute, and invite the workingmen not to constitute, political parties in the parliaments. Accordingly, since the foundation of the International Working Men's Association in 1864 – 1866, they have endeavored to promote their ideas directly amongst the labor organizations and to induce those unions to a direct struggle against capital, without placing their faith in parliamentary legislation.

'The plot' of the 'power'-guys having thickened considerably in these last hundred years... and with the advantage of the synthesis of our Good Three... Alice... Bernal... Boswell... Popper... Hirschman... and Kropotkin himself... his absolutely essential vision... we have a vantage not available to Kropotkin: we can see that we need our own definitions... new concepts... and new strategies... to advance to our freedom... We can see that our actions must be global and local simultaneously – that it is only by working with our communities to stem the tide of the functionaries – expanding the number of our Brothers and Sisters in soul-sufficiency – while uniting globally... that we can get free... We can see that the categories 'labor' and 'capital' are themselves weapons against us... that the compartmentalizations of 'class' are part of the atomization process that prevents our working in concert (as does 'power'...) – all of us – globally... We can see that 'power's key strategy: the systematic suppression of our authentic feelings... means that the individual must be the basic unit of political organization for us to get free... and to sustain our freedom... We can see that 'progress' exists in our unmediated... unfiltered and unfettered access to each other... globally... else... how grow our gifts?... and growing our gifts unfettered is 'happiness'... which is our right as human beings – as well as our 'right' as 'a people' yet leashed by the U.S. state... our codified right – codified in the Declaration of Independence – granting us... here in the U.S.... the honor of the lead-position... on the path to our Freedom.

[“151220claimingfeelingsclaimsworld_7.mp3”:]

How does 'regaining our spontaneous feelings' help win community support... and attain material self-sufficiency?...

...and... when Alice says that “those who have spontaneous feelings can only be themselves... if they want to remain true to themselves...” that... “when they sense that something is being demanded of them to which their whole being says no, they cannot do it...” that... “once they have found their authentic self... they will not be willing to relinquish it again for any price in the world...”

...what's the difference between claiming one's spontaneous feelings... and claiming one's body – i.e. refusing a system of coerced work?... if one is an advance toward the restoration of a healthy humanity... is not the other as well?...

This cannot be emphasized enough: we all want this... our self-creative energy has been suppressed... each one of us senses that we're being wasted... thrown away as worthless... each one of us is life that longs to live in the full possession of *all* our gifts – and 'all' requires *self*-directed. We've been waiting for help in how to do this... waiting for authentic clues beyond 'the system'...

...and we who are claiming our authentic selves can provide the outlet for this development... this longing-to-exist that are our authentic voices...

We saw this in the Occupy Movement... before agents infiltrated it... the truth of 'Stone Soup'... each one brought something to contribute...

...we can always do this... create 'communes'... because that ability is in us... only this time... we do it de-centralized (seriously de-centralized...really small-scale de-centralized... each little core-tribe... we who love each other... nonetheless... we have our eyes are open and we realize our love embraces all...) we do it de-centralized... we do it with consciousness... seeing our prize of freedom... we do it knowing what to do with agents... i.e.... we openly... as a group... acknowledge their presence... own that until we've established our freedom globally – that is... as long as 'power' exists – on some level we are all agents... and then... we engage Alice... and exercises to address this problem of the internalized-state on a regular basis...)

Our gifts and talents – and our proclivities toward them – we don't want to put on the market... or subject them to another or other... our gifts and talents we would rather use to help grow those of our Brothers and Sisters... and thereby our free future...

...merging that strategy into our goals... our 'Three Prizes'... brings material sufficiency for our movement...

...because our Sisters and Brothers... once our goals are clear to them... will share them... no less than we they want a path to true freedom... and will support it... as they take in our model... and what we offer... of the ancestors' knowledge... those ones of heart who we needed to see that path... and whose suppressed messages we are bringing back (we are thirsty for the truth... trust this process...) and in support of that... will fill that hat we set out before our 'performances'... our music... our poetry... our drums... our songs of freedom...

...seeing our model of claiming full power... inspires the same...

...and we begin now... by pooling our resources... melding together... and seeing what we make...

—

[“151220mutuallyconceiving_8.mp3”:]

“Reflections of '3.7': the September 27, 2015 Show”:

Perhaps... the definition of class... is that which drains energy... and gives nothing back...

...but it also traps... holds back...

...and silences...

...but the pent-up energy...

...the swallowed words...
...the earth that sings in us with all life...
...denies their death obsession...
...rejects it...
...and searches for its like...
...until it finds it...
...and life with life...
...releases its like...
...which... melding... mating... mutually-conceiving...
...births the world of our own making...

[“151220yesmenandsociopaths_9.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

The artificial nature of moral laws and rules of behavior is most clearly discernible in a situation in which lies and deception are powerless, i.e., in the mother – child relationship. A sense of duty may not be fruitful soil for love but it undoubtedly is for mutual guilt feelings, and the child will forever be bound to the mother by crippling feelings of guilt and gratitude. The Swiss author Robert Walser once said: “There are mothers who choose a favorite from among their children, and it may be that they will stone this child with their kisses and threaten... its very existence.” If he had known, had known on an *emotional* level, that he was describing his own fate, his life might not have ended in a mental institution.

It is unlikely that strictly intellectual attempts to seek explanations and gain understanding during adulthood can be sufficient to undo early childhood conditioning. Someone who has learned at his or her peril to obey unwritten laws and renounce feelings at a tender age will obey the written laws all the more readily, lacking any inner resistance. But since no one can live entirely without feelings, such a person will join groups that sanction or even encourage the forbidden feelings, which he or she will finally be allowed to live out within a collective framework.

Every ideology offers its adherents the opportunity to discharge their pent-up affect collectively while retaining the idealized primary object, which is transferred to new leader figures or to the group in order to make up for the lack of a satisfying symbiosis with the mother. Idealization of a narcissistically cathected group guarantees collective grandiosity [which describes perfectly the tribesmen of Plato... as well as their exploitation of the children they intentionally wound... – P.S.]. Since every ideology provides a scapegoat outside the confines of its own splendid group, the weak and scorned child who is part of the total self but has been split off and never acknowledged can now be openly scorned and assailed in this scapegoat...

[Question to Alice: Is this “idealized primary object” the 'powerful self' that has not been allowed to be?... split off and projected?... split off and projected no less than that part of oneself we are conditioned to see as 'weak'... If so... within the 'group ideology' (and the way she is using this notion is the way I use 'totalitarianism'... i.e.... the opposite of 'openness'... which is what Karl Popper advocated... and all folks of good heart...) – but among totalitarians... how do 'leaders' happen?... are they shaped with intent... as are their minions... only fed and stroked as is the Queen Bee by her drones... the 'shepherds' in the ideology of Plato?... or is their arrival a thing 'organic'... arising mysteriously from the morass of suppression of all spontaneous feeling... creativity... and initiative?... Rather... as she suggests... the 'narcissistically-cathected group' is the “idealized primary object” (although I suppose they're hoping for another 'Hitler'...) Because it seems to me... the attempt to make oneself 'kingly'-by-design – even 'philosopher-statesmen'-'kingly' – can only achieve its opposite... as Popper and Kropotkin have told us: to raise-by-rule-book destroys initiative... results in 'yes-men' (and sociopaths... in the case of our global-state-statesmen... irregardless... as was said by Göring... of “whether [their state] is a democracy or a fascist

dictatorship or a Parliament or a Communist dictatorship...”) it certainly doesn't result in those who are creative... “How do 'leaders' happen among totalitarians?” – they don't... 'power' robs... rapes... and pillages – they take what they want – that's the 'power' part that Alice neglected... Rule-by-the-most-mundane and most-damaged is what we get by default... simply because they work in concert and we don't... simply by our abdicating our responsibility... to claim our bodies... and establish the conditions that support our living free... – P.S.]

[The December 20, 2015 show ends here.]

The December 27, 2015 show – themes and things: “...recovering the power of 'the individual'... both societally and personally... i.e. how to help ourselves and our Brothers and Sisters recover the authentic self... the suppressed feelings denied us as children: our capacity to feel spontaneously – and... can this be accomplished through acts of consciousness... the development of authentic thought?...” and... “...what does it mean to 'de-commission the system'?...” and... “what is the connection between recovering our lost 'selves'...owning our own spontaneous feelings... and 'de-commissioning the system'? ...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 7... pages 47 – 50)

[“151227ondronesandmos_1.mp3”:]

[And... as an aside: I just want to caution us (myself) not to focus too much on the 'drone-thing'... not just because it's a distraction from our work here... but also because I am increasingly beginning to suspect that drones may or may not be involved in the delivery of 'the pain'... they're definitely involved in targeting but... I have noticed during my walks (at 4:30 AM) at Lakeshore (Lakeside?) Park that I can be tracked with or without drones... and I can also be hit with or without drones... and I just want to mention that so we don't *overly* focus on drones... they have other means... not sure what it is until we get some good-hearted whistle-blower to spill the beans on their secret weaponry... but our focus must be... single-mindedly... on getting free...

...I also want to mention that they've been posting signs at Lakeshore (Lakeside) Park indicating some public hearings on “What can we do to make the park better?...” and whenever they start doing that... they pack their folk... and I am just putting it out there in advance that I suspect they're going to try to get the citizenry to foot the bill for some sort of private policing at the park – just the vibe I've been getting from the continued harassment out there – but this is their m.o.... this is how they work through policy... and how 'democracy' is no barrier to them rolling in fascism... it just isn't... as Diana Spearman pointed out in her book *Modern Dictatorship*... and we are well in it... not in the 'dictatorship' part... but we are in the totalitarian part... when there is no ability to dissent without being targeted... physically injured... if not worse... and I suspect a lot... a lot... of folk have been targeted – and not just those who dissent... but those they consider superfluous... that they take Plato's 'mandate' to 'manage'... and 'limit' the population very seriously. But hopefully there will be some means for us... once we're free... to 'clear the air'... have some 'truth-outing' period... but until then our main focus is getting free...

...and... on 'getting free'... if you're seeing a way to do that that I'm missing... or even if you just want to encourage some way to expand these conversations... or come in and have a conversation on air... whatever it is... I'm totally open to having these discussions in an on-going and big sense... so if you have some suggestions... please let me know... at: nas2endwork@gmail.com]

December 23, 2015... Sisters and Brothers: Today we'll be exploring the areas of intersection and connection between these three discussions: “Claiming feelings claims the world...” “He who owns the lexicon rules the world...” and “Transitioning to our (global) freedom is to thoughtfully de-commission 'the system'...”

...and at their point of nexus we may discover the answer to our questions last week... inspired by 'Alice's Dilemma' of how to make the impact of her work 'bigger'... such that it shakes the system of 'class' itself: “What is the route... or what are the routes... to 'recovery' – of 'authenticity'... of spontaneous feelings... of 'voice'?... Could one route be... the debunking of the con 'economics'?”... and: “Is authentic thought a route to the recovery of our spontaneous feelings?”

[“151227obedienceashatetrigger_2.mp3”:]

In one of the 'Afterwords' to her book – *For Your Own Good: Hidden Cruelty in Child-Rearing and the Roots of Violence* – her tone is different... there is more worry... she is less optimistic:

...a younger, very empathic colleague whose work I regard highly... became [in the course of their conversation] increasingly reflective and then said very slowly, “You know, now I wonder if what is called pedagogy may not be simply a question of power, and if we shouldn't be speaking and writing much more about hidden power struggles instead of racking our brains about finding better methods of child-rearing.” That's exactly what I have tried to do in the book I have just finished,” I said. [I.e.... she is very much aware of the larger political implications of systematically-inculcated obedience in the population... she is aware that this training originates in a very self-aware elite... that this 'elite' is concerned both with the establishment of the State... as well as with securing 'its' Tribe's top place within a global hierarchy of states and statesmen... and... that she believes that her writing... disseminated more broadly... will... like one of the waves of authentic thought that occur continuously throughout the story of 'class'... that her writing will contribute to a general awakening of the need to demand... as our right... the conditions (globally) that will allow each one of us to be fully-developing individualities – still... does this answer the question of her colleague... if he is thinking along the same lines as we?... – P.S.]

It is the tragedy of well-raised people that they are unaware as adults of what was done to them and what they do themselves if they were not allowed to be aware as children. [It's interesting to juxtapose this statement about “well-raised people” with the observation of 'America's first anarchist'... Josiah Warren (about whom we will be reading in a moment...) “that the failure of this enterprise [mutualism] was chiefly due to the suppression of individuality and the lack of initiative and responsibility. These defects, he taught, were inherent to every scheme based upon authority and the community of goods. He advocated, therefore, complete individual liberty....” i.e.... he... as did Kropotkin... saw that obedience to Authority was being trained into the 'middle class'... and that this included 'the left'... which... Warren at least... may have presumed to be the ones to lead us... So... 'obedience' was seen... well before Alice... as a problem to overcome... a matter for contemplation. What was not seen... perhaps... was that the problem of 'obedience' was a matter of suppressed spontaneous feelings... due to an intentional scheme of 'child-rearing'... systematically-driven... by those who would become Plato's Tribesmen... – P.S.] Countless institutions in our society profit from this fact, and not least among them are totalitarian regimes. In this age when almost anything is possible, psychology can provide devastating support for the conditioning of the individual, the family, and whole nations. Conditioning and manipulation of others are always weapons and instruments in the hands of those in power even if these weapons are disguised with the terms *education* and *therapeutic treatment*. Since one's use and abuse of power over others usually have the function of holding one's own feelings of helplessness in check – which means the exercise of power is often unconsciously motivated – rational arguments can do nothing to impede this process [...these folks... the ones who hide... the ones who hoard the coin to tie us to the strings of their making... are like a machine that cannot stop on its own... and in being obedient... we stimulate their need to destroy us... (and we're going to have to think on that... on whether that's over-statement or not...) – P.S.].

In the same way that technology was used to help carry out mass murders in the Third Reich in a very short space of time, so too the more precise kind of knowledge of human behavior based on computer data and cybernetics can contribute to the more rapid, comprehensive, and effective soul murder of the human being than could the earlier intuitive psychology. There are no measures available to halt these developments. Psychoanalysis cannot do it; indeed, it is itself in danger of being used as an instrument of power in the training institutes. All that we can do as I see it, is to affirm and lend our support to the human objects of manipulation in their attempts to become aware and help them become conscious of their malleability and articulate their feelings so that they will be able to use their own resources to defend themselves against the soul murder that threatens them. (p. 278) [But what if the human objects of manipulation are the vast majority of us?... is what we're pondering today... – P.S.]

And we can't help but wonder whether her “younger colleague” might have been thinking of the problem of 'obedience' more globally... its role in a system of 'power'... whether he may have been thinking of 'hidden power' more globally... i.e....our 'power'-guys... the global-state-statesmen... and *their* hidden *global*... totalitarian scheming and clandestine aggregation of means... planning well-established at the time of Alice's writing of her work on 'Hidden Cruelty in Child-rearing'. Whether so or no... we are able – thanks to the analytical advances of the good folks we owe... to open the door on 'power's 'scheme'... and see the larger 'power-struggle-reality'... and confirm that the global scene must loom large in our planning... simultaneously... with the 'hidden-state-within' (and we must discuss how the coerced-work system is a form of 'infiltration'... how it automatically converts us into unconscious agents... how it readily becomes the basis of the installation of totalitarianism...)

...because... the scope... scale... and militaristic intentionality behind the scheming of these global 'power'-guys... is a scale of threat completely disproportionate to their numbers: they have a target (us – they literally want us to stop thinking [and a comment my son just made says this well: “they don't need to lock down 'thought'... they need to lock down 'thinking'”... i.e.... with enough 'diversions': technological toys for the privileged... violent assaults and war in the states targeted for the continuous disruption of people's lives... they believe this can be accomplished...] – they literally want us to stop thinking... to be a passive material they can shape and use as they see fit... as fuel to realize their ambition...)

[“151227fallsonusfolk_3.mp3”:]

So... they have a vision (of 'the Republic'... which provides them with a sense of their inherent 'justice': they believe they are entitled to rule – “Plato said so...” – because they are the ones who are the dialecticians... they are the 'trained and qualified philosophers') their abuse is systematic and calculated. And as... as Alice says... they cannot be reasoned with... and so we – the vast majority – must find means to protect our physical and spiritual existence... not just from a 'mindset'... not just by healing from our early childhood conditioning – though we certainly do want and need to get that hidden-state out of our heads – but means to protect ourselves from these 'power'-lusting global-statesmen...

...we have to defend not just our individual selves... but humanity itself...

...i.e. we have a need for strategy – a strategic defense from a threat that is purely and simply militaristic... this is called “seeing reality”... this is called “facing the threat without the rose lens...” and this is called “advocating for our Brothers and Sisters (it is a moment in which we must make some decisions about the purpose of our lives while we're here... face the fact that we cannot... now that we see the cons... let them continue... this is just our responsibility given what we've been shown – falls on us folk...)

...it is the global perspective that places a global threat in proper perspective... a vantage that allows us to see through 'power's proffered 'particularistic' (state-based – and they've created a hierarchy of states specifically to privilege some over others...) 'solutions' to the problems facing our existence (ideas they generally lift from our most visionary ancestors on the left...) and see that only by standing together globally can we advocate for ourselves successfully in the face of an organized global elite determined to maintain its position: i.e.... a threat that requires the unity of all human beings standing against it.

[“151227proudhon_4.mp3”:]

So the question of Alice's colleague remains... and is it not suggestive... given the threat is totalitarian... of the need for a range of strategies... as we've been arguing? In my recent posting of Kropotkin I found it both validating (in seeing that the issues we are engaged with necessarily interconnect – that there is a necessary correspondence between them...) and somewhat dispiriting to face... yet again... that this pathway of truth we've been carefully marking is not just extremely well-trod... but that its riches along the way have been entirely neglected... systematically suppressed... kept from us. I'm thinking not just of Kropotkin... though certainly this applies to him... but of P – J Proudhon... whose work... *What Is Property?*... I am discovering through the fresh lens of Kropotkin (and I'll share bits of this work as I did with Kropotkin's... we will be excerpting from the Dover edition... the Benj. R. Tucker translation...)

[“151227homeownership_5.mp3”:]

[The EMF-assault on me from these hidden-'power'-functionaries has been particularly rough of late... as the chance to get our house fully-paid unexpectedly came: a letter explaining I can now apply to receive the electrical trust funds held for me (the inner workings of this bureaucracy has been for me even more opaque than most...)]

[“151227easydecommissioning_6.mp3”:]

I am struck... in the bit of reading I've done of Proudhon... by the correspondence between the issues he discusses and the very ones we are grappling with here: the importance of claiming the lexicon... the fact that individual self-sufficiency must be the basis of our new world... that strategies for transitioning to that world are through a process of thoughtful 'de-commissioning'... and... moreover... the modeling... in the insistence on personal freedom... of the authentic self that we are hoping to bring to our communities. I suspect that our reading of Proudhon will provide needed strategic assistance in this moment of transition.

Now Proudhon advocated a society without government, and used the word anarchy to describe it, Proudhon repudiated, as is known, all schemes of communism, according to which mankind would be driven into communistic monasteries or barracks, as also all the schemes of state or state-sided socialism which were advocated by Louis Blanc and the collectivists.. When he proclaimed in his first memoir on property that “Property is theft,” he meant only property in its present, Roman-law, sense of “right of use and abuse;” in property-rights, on the other hand, understood in the limited sense of possession, he saw the best protection against the encroachments of the State. At the same time he did not want violently to dispossess the present owners of land, dwellings-houses, mines, factories and so on. He preferred to attain the same end by rendering capital incapable of earning interest [a strategy akin to “stem the tide of the functionaries...” or ‘starve the beast’... – P.S.]; and this he proposed to obtain by means of a national bank [and here we see already the heel of Achilles exposed... an opportunity for ‘power’ to seize... or... as we asked in our discussion of ‘agents’... is there a way to nullify ‘power’s tactic of co-optation?... – P.S.], a national bank based on the mutual confidence of all those who are engaged in production, who would agree to exchange among themselves their products at cost-value, by means of labor checks representing the hours of labor required to produce every given commodity [we can see that... staying within ‘power’s frame – within its concepts and definitions... its utilitarian mindset of ‘making-use’ – there are no new ideas (can we say ‘Timebanks’?... for instance...) or strategies... and that it is in the total rejection of that mindset... that we achieve our freedom... – P.S.]. Under such a system, which Proudhon described as “Mutuellisme,” all the exchanges of services would be strictly equivalent. Besides, such a bank would be enabled to lend money without interest, levying only something like 1 per cent, or even less, for covering the cost of administration. Every one being thus enabled to borrow the money that would be required to buy a house, nobody would agree to pay any more a yearly rent for the use of it. A general “social liquidation” would thus be rendered easy, without expropriation. The same applied to mines, railways, factories, and so on. [Let’s ponder this for a long moment... and the thoughts that come... about “easy ‘power’-liquidation...” I suspect... will be key to our ‘thought-full’ de-commissioning process... – P.S.]

[“151227plowingtheskies_7.mp3”:]

[As an aside... they are really plowing the skies this morning – and I suspect there was a large element of ‘butt-covering’ in that recent article planted in the *Express* about ‘chem-trails’... because I have often noticed aircraft one-eighty-ing up and down... or shooting across the sky... leaving trails... associated with my experience of intense swelling... such that I’ve come to believe it is intended to boost the effect of assault – FYI... but we must find a way to end the use of hidden weapons... they are a stranglehold on dissent... – P.S.]

In a society of this type the State would be useless. The chief relations between citizens would be based on free agreement and regulated by mere account keeping. The contests might be settled by arbitration. A penetrating criticism of the State and all possible forms of government and a deep insight into all economic problems, were well-known characteristics of Proudhon’s work.

It is worth noticing that French mutualism had its precursor in England, in William Thompson, who began by mutualism before he became a communist, and in his followers John Gray... and J. F. Bray... It had also its precursor in America. Josiah Warren, who was born in 1798 (cf W. Bailie, Josiah Warren, the First American Anarchist, Boston, 1900), and belonged to Owen’s “New Harmony,” considered that the failure of this enterprise was chiefly due to the suppression of individuality and the lack of initiative and responsibility. These defects, he taught, were inherent to every scheme based upon authority and the community of goods. He advocated, therefore, complete individual liberty.... (Peter Kropotkin, from his essay, “Anarchism”)

[“151227maydayfeelingthinking_8.mp3”:]

In this regard let's listen yet again to the comment of Kropotkin's friend... on his experience of the Paris Commune: "the boulevards [were filled] from one end of Paris to the other. Everyone talked about public affairs; all mere personal preoccupations were forgotten; no more was thought of buying or selling; all felt ready, body and soul, to advance towards the future. Men of the middle-class, even, carried away by the general enthusiasm, saw with joy a new world opened up. 'If it is necessary to make a social revolution,' they said, 'make it then. Put all things in common; we are ready for it.' All the elements of the revolution were there, it was only necessary to set them to work. When I returned to my lodging at night I said to myself, 'How fine is humanity after all, but no one knew it; it has always been calumniated.' Then came the elections, the members of the commune were named – and then little by little the ardor of devotion and the desire for action were extinguished..."

...and it is worth considering this from Rosa Luxemburg on the electrifying effect of the General Strike: "The day of this celebration was to be April 21. At first, the Australian workers intended this only for the year 1856. But this first celebration had such a strong effect on the proletarian masses of Australia, enlivening them and leading to new agitation, that it was decided to repeat the celebration every year... In fact, what could give the workers greater courage and faith in their own strength than a mass work stoppage which they had decided themselves? What could give more courage than the mustering of their own troops? Thus, the idea of a proletarian celebration was quickly accepted and, from Australia, began to spread to other countries until finally it had conquered the whole proletarian world... The first to follow the example of the Australian workers were the Americans. In 1886 they decided that May 1 should be the day of universal work stoppage. On this day 200,000 of them left their work and demanded the eight-hour day. Later, police and legal harassment prevented the workers for many years from repeating this [size] demonstration. However in 1888 they renewed their decision and decided that the next celebration would be May 1, 1890." (Rosa Luxemburg, "What Are the Origins of May Day?", *Selected Political Writings*, p. 315, Dick Howard [ed.], originally published in Polish in 1894)

What I've been pondering is: the feelings that must arise when we see the unity of our fellow human beings in claiming together our inherent freedom... not as a particular tribe... but as a united humanity... i.e the development of thought required to see that... must trigger our earliest knowledge of it: the feeling of oneness – our knowledge of being 'big'... infinite.

But there's also this to throw into the mix: this observation of Proudhon's... in a sense directed to Alice:

...that habit, like a second nature [...like a 'false self'?... – P.S.], has the power of fixing in the mind new categorical forms [...like 'obedience'?... like a 'master'?... like 'submission to authority'?... – P.S.] derived from the appearances which impress us, and by them usually stripped of objective reality, but whose influence over our judgments is no less predetermining than that of the original categories [...he is admitting the possible existence – insisted upon by the philosophers – of certain innate concepts to the mind... though he don't buy it... – P.S.]. Hence we reason by the eternal and absolute laws of our mind, and at the same time by the secondary rules, ordinarily faulty, which are suggested to us by imperfect observation [or one's parents perhaps?... – P.S.]. This is the most fecund source of false prejudices, and the permanent and often invincible cause of a multitude of errors. The bias resulting from these prejudices is so strong that often, even when we are fighting against a principle which our mind thinks false, which is repugnant to our reason, and which our conscience disapproves, we defend it without knowing it, we reason in accordance with it, and we obey it while attacking it. Enclosed within a circle, our mind revolves about itself, until a new observation, creating within us new ideas, brings to view an external principle which delivers us from the phantom by which our imagination is possessed.

["151227feelingknowledge_9.mp3":]

This short-hand of something George Eliot wrote... about one of her characters... keeps coming back to me: "Dorothea... with questions... had wrought (made) herself..."

[The actual quote reads: "Dorothea, early troubling her elders with questions about the facts around her, had wrought herself into some independent clearness as to the historical, political reasons why eldest sons had superior rights, and why land should be entailed..."]

Self-creation... self-creation is the source of authentic happiness... is what we've been arguing...

...and we've been arguing as well that we are made of words... as words form feelings in us... How does this happen?

When the feelings are with you... the thoughts associated with those feelings are with you... which means we're made of feelings...

...and thoughts... – all one...

As infants and small children all of us had questions... and these questions provoked certain feelings in us... and when these feelings occurred... before we had words...

...we couldn't hold onto them... they were lost... because words that weren't true... covered them up...

...and as those covered up feelings were *us*... our true selves...

...we... were lost too.

George Eliot also wrote that “feeling's a sort of knowledge...” and might it not be so that re-experiencing our earliest feelings triggers our earliest questions...

...and vice versa?... that with authentic thought's development... our authentic self is summoned?...

...and that this happens when we see with the eyes of the ancestors... the ones who figured out 'class'... figured it out for us... in this moment... and show us all we need to know – and with that knowing... the feeling-knowledge comes back... the certainty that the truth we were born with... is not just legitimate... but essential to our continued existence.

[“151227thesoulsoneness_10.mp3”:]

“Reflections of '3.7': the October 4, 2015 Show”:

“Mutually-conceiving”?... meaning?

... We are lost without our common home... our common souls... our mutually-seeing...

...still-born... adrift... without our knowledge... our experience... of the infinite...

... 'A people'... is?...

... The 'self' in others... caring for... tenderly tending to... the soul... in others...

... to 'be'... means... to 'see'?

... to see... to hear... to touch... to feel...

... for understanding without purpose...

... to be... the soul's oneness... in merging...

[The December 27, 2015 show ends here.]

The January 3, 2016 show – themes and things: Continues and develops our themes from last week: “...recovering the authentic self in order to develop the power of 'the individual'... both societally and personally...” and... “is it possible to recover feelings suppressed as children – our capacity to feel spontaneously – by developing our thought?... and if so how would we begin to do this?...” to answer which means we must ask... “what causes... most essentially... feelings to freeze?...” and... “is Proudhon right that new ideas could deliver us from the trap of the false notions of the past... and if so... by what process would this happen?... and... “what 'de-commissions' 'the system'?...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 8... pages 53 – 58)

[“160103housegoalbesetbyemf_1.mp3”:]

Update on our house becoming a planning resource: The process of accessing the funds held for me from my electrical work days (which are almost exactly the amount needed to pay off the mortgage... which is what I intend to do with them...) is much more drawn-out than I'd hoped... which means weeks on end of 24 – 7 weakening of my immune system with EMF /

microwave weapons – the relief offered by Lakeside Park in the early AM is brief... and less and less relief... so... to get to 'mortgage-paid' is going to be challenging. I'm mentioning the house because my intention is for it to become a center for planning global-system de-commissioning... although at the moment I feel sort of at a loss as to how to begin... so... your input is appreciated. And... on the subject of EMF-targeting... I also want to mention that I was 'hit' constantly during the 40 minutes-trip going... and 40 minutes-trip returning... to and from the trust fund office on Monday – *while* I was driving 60 miles per hour. There were a lot of cars and big trucks around me – there always seems to be a lot of metal positioned around me these days (which is what I suspect they're putting in the air...) We need to ponder seriously what can track and hit a vehicle going sixty miles per hour for forty minutes – what could do that?... and how many of these things do they have?

["160103theftothought_2.mp3":]

December 30, 2015... Sisters and Brothers: In Peter Kropotkin's study of evolution... *Mutual Aid: A Factor of Evolution*... he argues that 'mutual aid' provides those species that practice it with an "evolutionary' advantage..."

If we knew no other facts from animal life than what we know about the ants and the termites, we already might safely conclude that mutual aid (which leads to mutual confidence, the first condition for courage) and individual initiative (the first condition for intellectual progress) are two factors infinitely more important than mutual struggle in the evolution of the animal kingdom.... Their force is in mutual support and mutual confidence.... (Petr Kropotkin, *Mutual Aid: A Factor of Evolution*, pgs. 13 – 16)

...but... our extended consultations with Alice Miller and the anarchists: Peter Kropotkin himself... as well as Pierre – Joseph Proudhon... have raised questions... leading to still more... that are causing us to probe deeply into what it means to be a human being... and it seems to me that our deep probing must include Kropotkin's analysis of 'mutual aid' – that a thoughtful probing of it could help us with our 'thought-full de-commissioning' process...

...and that our deep probing must include the question Proudhon prompts: "With what experience do we come to the 'world'?... do we bring to the world?..."

All men believe in God [our lexicons require 'rectification': his 'God' is my 'universal spirit'... or 'soul'... or 'our oneness'... or 'the ancestors'... 'the Great Communal Mind'... 'our deep connectedness'... 'the single energy that infuses all life'... 'the eternal'... 'the infinite'... – P.S.]: this dogma [belief in God...] belongs at once to their conscience and their mind. To humanity God is a fact as primitive, an idea as inevitable, a principle as necessary as are the categorical ideas of cause, substance, time, and space to our understanding. God is proven to us by the conscience prior to any inference of the mind; just as the sun is proven to us by the testimony of the senses prior to all the arguments of physics. We discover phenomena and laws by observation and experience; only this deeper sense reveals to us existence. Humanity believes that God is; but in believing in God, what does it believe? In a word, what is God?

...is not our knowledge of 'the infinite' part of our experience?... and is this not knowledge that we bring to the world?

...and then... our deep probing must include the questions Alice prompts: "...is it our knowledge of 'the infinite' that is suppressed?..." and (we asked in our October 11, 2015 show...): "and isn't 'suppression' a theft?... reinforced by our atomization?" ...suppression that left behind questions?..." "with an imprint to be rediscovered... or not?..." "and so... then... isn't 'suppression' a theft as well of 'the one who asks questions'?... suppressed... when questioning is forbidden... when it is too threatening to the parent?"

"...and isn't the theft of questions... the theft of 'thought'?..."

"...and if questions... prompted by our knowledge of 'the infinite'... of our deep connectedness... the 'knowledge beyond knowledge'... that is therefore beyond 'question'... if those questions are forbidden... those prompted by our 'core assumption'... the basis of our existence..."

"...must it not be so that... at the core of 'Thought's suppression... is 'Fear'?"

[“160103bodyknowingofconnection_3.mp3”:]

Enclosed within a circle, our mind revolves about itself, until a new observation, creating within us new ideas, brings to view an external principle which delivers us from the phantom by which our imagination is possessed.

The mind... enclosed in a circle... going around itself... is suggestive of 'stasis'... and what causes us to freeze in our tracks?... if not 'fear'? Is it not our deeply-buried fear that must be excavated... brushed off... and stood in the cool light of day?

How can authentic thinking overcome our fear?

What is this fear... essentially?... in a 'class'-system... given... as Proudhon says... “the *eternal* and *absolute* laws of our mind...? and given... as Kropotkin suggests... that one... if not the core... 'law of our mind'... is mutual aid?... the assumption... and so the search for... association... relationship with 'the all' – i.e.... our deep 'historical-body-knowledge' of 'the communal': the fundamental 'knowing'... that we are not alone...

What prompts this fear... if not the deep 'historical-body-knowing' that something is amiss... that what should be present... isn't...

What is this fear?...

...That we are alone.

The ancestors have our back... that's the point... that's why they're suppressed: they hold... for us... wealth... sustenance... joy... and vitality... they hold for us connection... in holding fast the truth – a gift beyond 'generous' – they guide us back to our 'selves'... so that... once we are back... we can also learn from all other beings that are free: the children with eyes freshly seeing... the birds... the trees...

...we need them to breathe... when all around else... is trying to smother authenticity...

...But we have to ask... we have to thank them... we have to recall our questions...

...'understanding' alone is not enough... as Alice said... we have to put those questions in our bodies: follow the ancestors... follow our questions... thank them...

Thank you... the ancestors – You see... you see... you share your sight... you want us to be free.

—

[“160103movingbeyondfear_4.mp3”:]

Kropotkin argues that 'mutual aid' provides an 'evolutionary advantage'...

...I would go beyond this and say that mutual aid is not just an advantage... but the core of our being... essential to our being human...

...and so... the core of what was stolen from us... with the institution of the 'class'-system... the core of our soul's loss... the core-theft that robs us of our 'selves'...

And what Proudhon... cannot know... because the plan was in its inception... was the organized ambition of 'power' to do our thinking for us – this is Bentham's gift to 'power' of the Panopticon – that it – 'power' – would be 'the Mind' of which we would be possessed... that it would be 'the Mind' that possesses... all of us...

...such that... 'the Mind' we revolve about... 'the Mind' we become... is not our own...

...such that... when our children come... we don't see them... which stimulates an enormous fear in them... because they come with the body-knowledge of 'the infinite'... with the body-knowledge of 'connectedness'... they come with the expectation of deep... eternal... 'Relationship'...

...and when they don't find this...

...it is as if a wrench were thrown into their thought process... they have no ground from which to jump... in the absence of validation of their body-knowledge with which we come...

And this is a 'system'-wide Fear... a 'system'-wide confusion... that we are now... as peoples... as nations... as open tribes...

...moving beyond...

...with a 'system'-wide response...

[“160103powersreflection_5.mp3”:]

“Reflections of '3.7': the October 11, 2015 Show”:

For what are we when separate?... if not but 'power's reflection... the totalitarian center holds... when we revolve around it...

...the single 'Mind' of 'power'... enclosing us... repeating their compulsions...

...the single 'Eye' of 'power'... watching us... repeating their compulsions...

...the single 'Command' of 'power'... demanding that we watch them...

...the single 'Judgment' of 'power'... disposing of us... when we are deemed superfluous...

And we?...

...just a'troddin'... endless... endless... a'troddin'... lost in... mist?

...souls a'drift...

[“160103powersdeathobsession_6.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

...The reference in Himmler's speech to the “bacillus” of weakness which is to be exterminated and cauterized demonstrates very clearly the role assigned to the Jews by someone suffering from grandiosity who attempts to split off the unwelcome elements of his own psyche.

In the same way that analytic familiarity with the mechanisms of splitting off and projection can help us to understand the phenomenon of the Holocaust, a knowledge of the history of the Third Reich helps us to see the consequences of “poisonous pedagogy” more clearly. Against the backdrop of the rejection of childishness instilled by our training, it becomes easier to understand why men and women had little difficulty leading a million children, whom they regarded as the bearers of the feared portions of their own psyche, into the gas chambers. One can even imagine that by shouting at them, beating them, or photographing them, they were finally able to release the hatred going back to early childhood. From the start, it had been the aim of their upbringing to stifle their childish, playful, and life-affirming side. The cruelty inflicted on them, the psychic murder of the child they once were, had to be passed on in the same way: each time they sent another Jewish child to the gas ovens, they were in essence murdering the child within themselves. [This need to split off and murder what they see as weak in themselves... includes that weakness called “fear-inspired obedience...” and that to the degree that we do not claim our power... we stimulate this urge in them to destroy us... Those they consider 'weak' and 'deficient'... those in 'power' long to destroy... They develop 'reasons'... rationales... as we see with the Nazis... to 'justify' that longing... but fundamentally... as we're going to discuss when we read Proudhon... underneath that is rage... is hate... is a longing to destroy... – P.S.]

[“160103theunseenchild_7.mp3”:]

In her book *Kindesmißhandlung und Kindesrechte (Mistreatment of Children and Children's Rights)*, Gisela Zenz tells about Steele and Pollock's psychotherapeutic work in Denver with parents who abuse their children. The children are treated along

with their parents. The description of these children is useful in helping us to understand the origins of the behavior of the Nazi mass murderers, who undoubtedly were beaten as children:

The children were virtually unable to develop object relationships commensurate with their age. Spontaneous and open reactions directed at the therapist were rare, as was the direct expression of affection or anger. Only a few of them took a direct interest in the therapist as a person. After six months of therapy twice weekly, a child was unable to remember the name of the therapist outside of the consulting room. In spite of apparently intense interaction with the therapist and a growing bond between therapist and child, the relationship always changed abruptly at the end of the hour, and when the children left, they gave the impression that their therapist meant nothing to them. The therapists attributed this partly to an adjustment on the child's part to the imminent return to the home environment and partly to a lack of object constancy, which was also observed when therapy was interrupted by vacation or illness. Almost uniformly, all the children denied the importance of the loss of object, which most of them had experienced repeatedly. Some of the children were gradually able to admit that the separation from the therapist over vacation had affected them, had made them sad and angry.

The authors were struck most by the children's inability to feel at ease and to experience pleasure. Some never laughed for months on end, and they entered the consulting room like "gloomy little adults," whose sadness or depression was only too obvious. When they played games, they seemed to be doing it more for the therapist's sake than for their own enjoyment. Many of the children seemed to be unfamiliar with toys and games and especially with playing with adults. They were surprised when the therapists took pleasure in the games and had fun playing with the children. By identifying with the therapist, the children were gradually able to experience pleasure in playing.

Most of the children saw themselves in an extremely negative light, describing themselves as "stupid," as "a child no one likes," who "can't do anything" and is "bad." They could never admit to being proud of something they obviously did well. They hesitated to try anything new, were terribly afraid of doing something wrong, and frequently felt ashamed. Several of them seemed to have developed scarcely any feeling of self. This can be seen as a reflection of the attitude of the parents, who did not regard their child as an autonomous person but entirely in relation to the gratification of their own needs....

[While 'the family' is (under 'class'...) no doubt... a mini-totalitarian state (and this one occupying the extreme end of the 'viciousness-spectrum'...) this 'state' is replicated in the workplace... in the schools... and in the ranking we engage in without a thought as to its origins... in the mindless conditioning we are 'systematically' dissuaded from seeing – i.e. this insidious insinuation of 'rank' throughout our lives... the omnipresent insistence on 'obedience' that destroys spontaneous feeling and silences voice... is *in reality* (never-discussed) "hidden-'power'" manifested... – P.S.]

["160103rageoftheunseen_8.mp3":]

...An important role also seemed to be played by frequent changes in the living situation. One six-year-old girl, who had lived with ten different foster families, couldn't understand why she kept her own name no matter whose house she was living in. The drawings the children made of people were exceedingly primitive, and many of them were unable to make a drawing of themselves although the pictures they drew of inanimate objects were appropriate for their age.

The children had a conscience – or rather, a system of values that was extremely rigid and punitive. They were highly critical of themselves as well as of others, became indignant or extremely agitated when other children overstepped their iron-clad rules for what was good and bad....

The children were almost completely unable to express anger and aggression toward adults. Their stories and games, on the other hand, were full of aggression and brutality. Dolls and fictitious persons were constantly being beaten, tormented, and killed. Many children repeated their own abuse in their play. One child, whose skull had been broken three times as an infant, always made up stories about people or animals who suffered head injuries. Another child, whose mother had attempted to drown it when it was a baby, began the play therapy by drowning a doll baby in the bathtub and then having the police take the mother to prison. Although these real-life events played little part in the children's openly expressed fears, they were the basis of a strong unconscious preoccupation. The children were almost never able to express their anxieties verbally, yet they harbored intense feelings of rage and a strong desire for revenge, which, however, were accompanied by a great fear of what might happen if these impulses should erupt....

[I hope the extreme violence of this example does not distract us from seeing the degree to which 'obedience' / utilitarianism... as the base mindset of 'class'... makes puppets of all of us... places us in the hands of hidden-'power'-actors... the only ones

who benefit from the imposition of this mindset... who have ever... through the ages... insisted on 'making use of us... for any purpose that occurs to their heartlessness... a 'use' that has grown ever-more heinous... Time to break that cycle... is what our ancestors are telling us... time for us to get 'big'... grow our gifts... work together to build that alternative... And mos def time to take responsibility for all the children... – P.S.]

[“160103respectingthechild_9.mp3”:]

[...and that's a hard notion to wrap our minds around... we who have been trained to view ourselves and our children as property of 'power' – unconsciously: and our reading of Proudhon will help us see how our stated beliefs and our behavior are generally (under 'class') not in consonance... and argues that in making our behavior conscious... and the beliefs implied by our behavior conscious... we can reclaim our original thought process – our original 'selves'...

...but I was about to say that it is a difficult notion: this idea of taking responsibility for all the children... and perhaps we should devote a show to clarifying it... to breaking down what it means... – P.S.]

...With the development of transference during therapy, these feelings were directed against the therapist, but almost always in an indirect passive-aggressive form. For example, there was an increase in the number of accidents in which the therapist was hit by a ball or something “accidentally” happened to his belongings....

In spite of minimal contact with the children's parents, the therapists had the strong impression that the parent-child relationship in these cases was characterized to a great degree by seductiveness and other sexual overtones. One mother got into bed with her seven-year-old son whenever she felt lonely or unhappy, and many parents, often in competition with each other, urgently sought out the affections of their children, many of whom were in the midst of the Oedipal stage. One mother described her four-year-old daughter as “sexy” and a flirt and said it was obvious she would have trouble in her relationships with men. It appeared as if those children who were forced to serve the needs of their parents in general were not spared having to serve the parents' sexual needs as well, which usually took the form of covert, unconscious advances toward their children.

[“160103obedienceasstrategy_10.mp3”:]

It can be regarded as a stroke of genius on Hitler's part that for purposes of projection he offered the Jews to the Germans, who had been brought up to be self-controlled and obedient and to suppress their feelings. But the use of this mechanism is by no means new. It can be observed in most wars of conquest, in the Crusades, and in the Inquisition, as well as in recent history. Little attention has been given up to now, however, to the fact that what is called child-rearing is based for the most part on this mechanism and that, consequently, the exploitation of this mechanism for political purposes would be impossible without this kind of upbringing....

[And let's not forget... the complete and total correspondence – that Alice showed us in the excerpts from the poisonous pedagogues – between their methods for creating 'perfect' (that is to say... perfectly obedient...) 'citizens' and making the 'perfect' State... i.e.... the invention of 'child-rearing' was a conscious political strategy... – P.S.]

...Characteristic of these examples of persecution is the presence of a strong narcissistic element. A part of the *self* is being attacked and persecuted here, not a real and dangerous enemy, as, for example, in situations when one's life is actually threatened.

Child-rearing is used in a great many cases to prevent those qualities that were once scorned and eradicated in oneself from coming to life in one's children. In his impressive book, *Soul Murder: Persecution in the Family*, Morton Schatzman shows the extent to which the child-rearing methods advocated by Daniel Gottlob Moritz Schreber, a renowned and influential pedagogue of the mid-nineteenth century, were based on the need to stifle certain parts of one's own self. What Schreber, like so many parents, tries to stamp out in his children is what he fears in himself:

The noble seeds of human nature sprout upwards in their purity almost of their own accord if the ignoble ones, the weeds, are sought out and destroyed in time. This must be done ruthlessly and vigorously. It is a dangerous and yet frequent error to be put off guard by the hope that misbehavior and flaws in a child's character will disappear by themselves. The sharp edges and corners of one or the other psychic flaw may possibly become somewhat blunted, but left to themselves the roots remain deeply imbedded, continuing to run rampant in poisonous impulses and thus preventing the noble tree of life from flourishing as it should. A child's misbehavior will become a serious character flaw in the adult and opens the

way to vice and baseness... *Suppress everything* in the child, keep everything away from him that he should not make his own, and guide him perseveringly toward everything to which he should habituate himself. [Quoted by Schatzman]

The desire for “true nobility of soul” justifies every form of cruelty toward the fallible child, and woe to the child who sees through this hypocrisy.

The pedagogical conviction that one must bring a child into line from the outset has its origin in the need to split off the disquieting parts of the inner self and project them onto an available object. The child's great plasticity, flexibility, defenselessness, and availability make it the ideal object for this projection. The enemy within can at last be hunted down on the outside.

Peace advocates are becoming increasingly aware of the role played by these mechanisms, but until it is clearly recognized that they can be traced back to methods of child raising, little can be done to oppose them. For children who have grown up being assailed for qualities the parents hate in themselves can hardly wait to assign these qualities to someone else so they can once again regard themselves as good, “moral,” noble, and altruistic. Such projections can easily become part of any Weltanschauung.

[This concludes the chapter “Poisonous Pedagogy”... As we have not yet reached our 'object': her recommendations for countermanding... and ultimately uprooting entirely... the insidious obedience / utilitarianism-training of 'class'... as we build our alternative to it... let's continue on a bit... until we feel we have what we need in hand... – P.S.]

[“160103silentpanicrage_11.mp3”:]

“Is There a Harmless Pedagogy?”

Gentle Violence

Overt abuse is not the only way to stifle a child's vitality. I shall illustrate this by the example of a family whose history I was able to trace over several generations.

A young, nineteenth-century missionary and his wife went to Africa to convert people to Christianity. Through this work, this man was able to free himself of the tormenting religious doubts of his youth. At last *he* became a true Christian, who – like his father before him – gave his all to transmitting his faith to others. The couple had ten children, eight of whom were sent to Europe as soon as they were old enough to go to school. One of the children was the future father of A., and he always told his only son how lucky he, the son, was to grow up at home with his family. He himself, after being sent away to school as a little boy, had not seen his parents again until he was thirty years old. With trepidation he had waited at the train station for the parents he could not remember, and, sure enough, when they arrived, he had not recognized them. He often told this anecdote, not with any sign of sadness, but with amusement. A. described his father as kind, good-natured, understanding, appreciative, contented, and genuinely devout. All his family and friends also admired these qualities in him, and there was no ready explanation for why his son, having such a kindhearted father, should develop a severe obsessional neurosis.

Since childhood, A. had been burdened with disturbing obsessive thoughts of an aggressive nature, but he was unable to experience feelings of annoyance or dissatisfaction, to say nothing of anger or rage, in response to actual frustrations. He also had suffered since childhood because he had not “inherited” his father's “serene, natural, trusting” piety, he attempted to attain it by reading devotional literature, but “bad” (because critical) thoughts, which filled him with panic, always stood in the way. It took a long time in analysis before A. was able to express criticism without clothing it in alarming fantasies he then had to struggle to keep at bay. When his son joined a Marxist group at school, this came to his aid. It was easy for A. to locate contradictions, limitations, and intolerance in his son's ideology, and this subsequently enabled him to subject psychoanalysis to critical scrutiny as well and define it as the “religion” of his analyst. During the stages of transference he became increasingly aware of the tragedy of his relationship with his father. Examples of his disappointment with various ideologies multiplied, and he realized more and more how these ideologies served as defense mechanisms for their adherents. Intense feelings of indignation at all possible forms of mystification came to the surface. The newly awakened anger of the deceived child finally led him to be suspicious of all religious and political ideologies. His obsessions diminished but they did not disappear entirely until these feelings could be experienced in connection with the long dead and internalized father of his childhood.

In his analysis A. was now able to acknowledge the helpless rage he felt at the terrible constrictions that had been imposed on him by his father's attitude. He was expected to be, like his father, good-natured, kind, appreciative, undemanding, not to cry, always to see everything "from the positive side," never to be critical, never to be dissatisfied, always to think of those who were "much worse off." A.'s previously unrecognized feelings of rebelliousness revealed to him the narrow confines of his childhood, from which everything had to be banished that was not suitable for his devout and "sunny" nursery. And only after he had been allowed to articulate his own revolt (which he had had to split off and project onto his son so that he could oppose it there) was the father's other side revealed to him. He had found it in his own rage and mourning, no one else could ever have convinced him of it, because his father's unstable side had found a home only in the psyche of the son, in his obsessional neurosis, where it had taken root in a remorseless way, crippling this son for forty-two years. By means of his illness, the son had helped preserve his father's piety. [Afterthought as I listen to this audio: I'd like to think that there are two 'aspects' of the need of 'artists' – writers... perhaps... particularly – to record... document... the abuse they experienced... and their process on the road to recovery: that doing so both cements... 'secures'... that recovery – i.e.... there is the personal benefit – but that... beyond the conscious need to 'help others who may also be struggling with the same problems / issues...' there is an unconscious need to literally heal humanity itself. I'm considering this in the context of our question: "is there a non-therapeutic route to the re-experiencing of suppressed feelings... such that we can recover our authentic 'selves'... and thereby exorcise the 'state-in-us' – freeing our energy for our movement to achieve global human freedom?... Because 'class' is totalitarian – global and omnipresent throughout all social institutions – the problem of freeing ourselves from its influence is much bigger... we challenged Alice to consider... than she seemed willing to own – i.e.... the fact that 'class' is totalitarian means that there is a *generalized suppression* of authentic feeling and thought... across the global populations... in proportion to the degree of strength of that internalized 'state-in-us' in them... And so... if the ancestors... as we've been arguing... are a route to recovering and claiming our true 'selves' – by means of incorporating within ourselves a process of authentic thinking ('following our questions'...) how does this happen? What... specifically... are the feelings that have been suppressed... in this 'soft'... omnipresent... state-sanctioned and so invisible... sense of 'psychological abuse'? (I'll bring these thoughts to the next show...) – P.S.]

[“160103routinizedcruelty_12.mp3”:]

Now that A. had found the way back to his childhood emotions, he was also able to empathize with the child that his father had once been. He asked himself how his father had dealt with the fact that his parents sent eight children so far away without ever visiting them, for the sake of promulgating the Christian idea of brotherly love in Africa. Wouldn't he necessarily have deep doubts about such a love and about the meaningfulness of work that required such cruelty towards one's own children? [This routinized cruelty *is* 'the system'... is 'power'... though never discussed as such... – P.S.] But he dared not have doubts, for fear his devout and strict aunt would not keep him. And how is a little six-year-old, whose parents are thousands of miles away, to fare all by himself? He has no choice but to believe in this God who demands such inconceivable sacrifices (for this makes his parents obedient servants of a good cause); he has no choice but to become devout and cheerful if he wants to be loved. In order to survive, he has to be content, appreciative, etc., and develop a sunny, happy disposition so that he will not be a burden to anyone.

If someone who has turned into this kind of a person becomes a father himself, he will be confronted with a situation that threatens the whole structure he has taken such pains to erect: he sees before him a child full of life, sees how a human being is meant to be, how *he* could have been if obstacles hadn't been placed in his way. But his fears are soon activated: this cannot be allowed to happen. If the child were allowed to stay as he is, wouldn't that mean that the father's sacrifices and self-denial weren't really necessary? Is it possible to have a child turn out well without forcing him to be obedient, without breaking his will, without combating his egoism and willfulness, as we have been told to do for centuries? Parents cannot permit themselves to ask these questions. To do so would cause no end of trouble...

[The January 3, 2016 show ends here.]

[“160110setupforfascism_1.mp3”:]

The January 10, 2016 show – themes and things: Continues and develops our themes from last week: "...what new ideas could deliver us from the trap of the false notions of 'class'... and if there are thoughts or ideas that can do this... what are

they... and by what process would this happen?... and... “what 'de-commissions' 'the system'?...” and... “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 9... pages 59 – 64)

January 4, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: what 'de-commissions' 'the system'?... Perhaps we should ask it in the reverse: what *commissions* 'the system'? One answer... that we're going to explore today... and which builds on the discussion in our last show... is: “the relinquishment... or the theft... of our thought process...” which is... in the last analysis... our co-signing of their plans for us... our (unconscious) assent... an authorization... commission... of their vision...

(When we view their destruction of us from their perspective – through the lens of 'power'... their destruction of certain 'qualities of us' makes 'perfect'-sense...

– and let's never forget... this is destruction by clandestine means... consider the teams of criminal 'doctors' they must have [and Miklos could not be more dead-on in his sense of urgency when he warned us about them... he could see that 'power' was seeking ways to improve the secrecy of its killing continuously...] consider the teams of criminal 'doctors' they must employ to think up ways to use microwaves to cause ill health... illness... disease... and death... – we have to accept that if they can compel our 'labor'... they can compel [and are compelling...] fascism... –

[“160110mechanizingobed_2.mp3”:]

...if we co-sign the 'fact' that we are “workers”... why keep around those who do not 'work' (for them...)? the old... the 'unfit'... to be 'of service' (to them...) – particularly as regular 'culling' [from the Latin for 'collect'...] brings numerous benefits (for 'power'...) the result is both efficient and pleasing to the eye: you have a populace that is “forever young”... (Ah youth!... a pleasure to view... and so easily duped – a delight to manage...) and then there's the incalculable benefit of killing that nasty parent who you so hated (although you suppressed it... that feeling...) over and over again... who was so cruel to you... and in slaughtering the 'weak' (which all 'workers' are if only because we haven't a clue...) you can also continuously slaughter... you!...)

Recall we said that Bentham... following Plato's dictum: “no one should ever be without a leader...” – which means rigid hierarchy (imagine all the suffering embedded in those two words...) – showed 'power' how this could be achieved through a methodical installation of obedience in we-the-common-folk (and in themselves.) This... 'mechanization'... determined by the Few... for their peculiar 'advancement'... *is* the 'class'-system...

...and though... upon thought... it is obvious... we... as a people... have never had that discussion of the fact that 'hierarchy' *requires* (by definition) the relinquishment of the 'thought-process'...

(...and for the sake of clarity in this discussion... we are distinguishing 'thought-process'... from 'thought' as an object for sale... or 'thinking' as an activity commissioned by 'power' for its purposes.)

Recall that Bentham's gift to 'power' of the Panopticon allowed for the mechanical... in a sense... installation of obedience in we-the-common-folk...

...in his design the Few can control the Many if the Few strictly control the thoughts of the Many... a strategy that extinguishes our thought-process (and I'm speaking of us as a broad generality...) as what a 'thought-process' requires to exist... we will be arguing... is the absence of coercion... which means the absence of 'class'.

Under the terms of 'class'... on the other hand... we become but various expressions of... “the Mind of 'power'”... as 'power' will not tolerate thinking outside of its strict constraints...

And recall also our brief mention of the fact that our discussion of Proudhon will help us understand the lack of consonance... under 'class'... between our behavior and our beliefs... which... he will be showing us... and Alice is in concurrence with this... we can address by making our behavior conscious... and the beliefs implied by our behavior conscious... In so doing... we said... we can reclaim our original thought process – our original 'selves'.

Today we'll be examining that notion more closely.

["160110therapeuticgeneralstrike_3.mp3":]

Listening to this audio-file from our last show: "160103silentpanicrage_11.mp3"... and recalling Alice's point that so much of the psychological insight needed... by all of us generally... to get past the mindset and 'system' of 'class'... first seems to appear in the work of writers... recalling their experience of abuse... it struck me that there are probably... given what we're learning from Kropotkin about our inherent quality of... and need for... 'mutual aid'... that there are probably two 'aspects' of this need of 'artists' to record... document... the abuse they experienced as children... and their process on the road to recovery: that doing so both cements... 'secures'... that recovery – i.e.... there is the personal benefit – and there is a broader social... or 'communal'... aspect as well... in the conscious need to 'help others who may also be struggling with the same problems / issues...' – but there is also more I think... beyond the averred motives: an unconscious need to literally heal humanity itself.

I'm considering this in the context of our question: "is there a non-therapeutic... or 'non-analytic'... route to the re-experiencing of suppressed feelings (a Global General Strike perhaps?...) such that we can recover our authentic 'selves'... and thereby exorcise the 'state-in-us' – freeing our energy for our movement to achieve global human freedom?... " – i.e.... to heal humanity itself.

Because 'class' is totalitarian – global and omnipresent throughout all social institutions – the problem of freeing ourselves from its influence is much bigger... we challenged Alice to consider... than she seemed willing to own – i.e.... the fact that 'class' is totalitarian means that there is a *generalized* suppression of authentic feeling and thought... across the global populations... in direct proportion to the strength of that 'internalized state' in us... And so... if the ancestors... as we've been arguing... are a route to recovering and claiming our true 'selves' – by means of incorporating within ourselves a process of authentic thinking ('following our questions'...) how does this happen? What... specifically... are the feelings that have been suppressed... in this seemingly 'softer' – because embedded in our heads – omnipresent... state-sanctioned (and so invisible...) sense of psychological abuse that is 'suppression of spontaneous feelings and the freezing of authentic thought'?... And another question: How does this process of authentic thinking get us to the point where we are re-experiencing those suppressed feelings?

And then... listening to that mp3 again...and considering the qualities that the son *was expected to display* (perform):

He was expected to be, like his father, good-natured, kind, appreciative, undemanding, not to cry, always to see everything "from the positive side," never to be critical, never to be dissatisfied, always to think of those who were "much worse off."

...are these not the qualities expected of a 'good worker'?... are we not all... under 'class'... expected to be 'productive'?

And given the training we all receive... under 'class'... in utilitarianism... subjected to varying degrees of manipulation and coercion... in every social institution of 'class' – in order to 'mold' this 'desired' behavior... coerce into being these qualities – given this generalized (often unconscious) expectation (under 'class') that we exist to serve 'the economy'... and that children must be trained (shaped) accordingly...

...when a fresh new life enters this 'scene' (and it is very much a 'scene' – a theater-construction...) a child who sees the world 'right-side-up'... i.e.... honestly... who has not been conditioned to believe that it exists to be of service... what is the reaction of this child to this 'molding' process?

Is it not rage?...

["160110waitingquestions_4.mp3":]

Rage...

...but a rage that occurs within the context of a shadowy incipient fear... creating uncertainty... the first appearance of a life-long worm (under 'class'...) weakening the child from within...

...such that his or her rage is easily conquered... easily suppressed... by the parent?...

...because to displease the parent could mean total psychic isolation (under conditions of atomization...): the threat of 'exile'... banishment... and this is completely unacceptable... must be prevented at all costs – the cost of an authentic 'self'?... So be it.

So what is our conscious... political... strategic... response to this dynamic that... when never discussed... works against our resistance?

“Reflections of '3.7': the October 18, 2015 Show”:

Because we lost our certainty...
Because we were silenced...
Because our true thought... our authentic questions... was met with frowns...
...while our performances received warm praise...
We set them aside... our questions...
...we honed our presentation...
We received our praise...
We never forgot... we were being watched...
Our attention never wandered... from our performance...
Our parent... the state... was proud of us...
But they waited for us... our questions...
They nagged us in our dreams...
They sprung into our minds unexpectedly...
And the state... our parent... ever-vigilant in its surveillance...
...noticed our inattention... and was worried about us...
...a bacillus... it thought... we might be.

[“160110enginesofdestruction_5.mp3”:]

In suggesting that by “facing our fear” we might reclaim our authentic selves for a movement that embraces 'the all'... all that has been stolen from all of us... i.e.... for a movement that claims the global vantage... we are using clichéd (i.e.... co-opted...) language (“facing our fears”) of the the 'self-healing movement'. By what process or means does concern for 'the self' expand into concern for healing 'humanity' itself? Why is this expansion of concern not 'automatic' with the recovery of the authentic 'self'?... or is it? What conditions would ensure this? Is placing our understanding of what happened to us in the right (most accurate) context what is key? Does “following our questions” do this automatically?

Is a *broad* –'wholistic'... 'global' – *understanding* of the constraints that led to our parents' self-betrayal... and subsequent betrayal of us... what is missing? Or is more than this needed?

There has been suppression of the work of Alice (and... of course... returning to our attention those scholars key to our efforts to get free must be part of our 'de-commissioning-the-global-system' process...): her documentation of the correspondence between the parent's attempt to shape 'the perfect child'... and the state's... or rather the tiny Few's (those tiny Few who have crafted and now run the global-system...) the tiny Few's aim to shape 'the perfect state.' It is critical that we begin to have that discussion... that we no longer forfeit the growth of our – we-the-people's – understanding of what is happening to us to those whose interest it is to limit and control us... It is especially important that we don't forfeit this responsibility as regards the children... that we support their unconditioned thought-process – beginning... perhaps... with a discussion of that quote from Goring that includes him saying this on the subject of 'war': “the people can always be brought to the bidding of the leaders [i.e. to kill their Brothers and Sisters]. That is easy. All you have to do is tell them they are being attacked and denounce the pacifists for lack of patriotism and exposing the country to danger. It works the same way in any country.” This routine manipulation of us is evident in any 'power'-fed rag (newspaper) you pick up. Two of the most glaring examples (of many) from the *Epoch Times* of December 24 – 30, 2015 can serve to illustrate. Either one easily could consume an entire show devoted to unpacking its embedded propaganda... and we may do so sometime as part of a broader discussion of the Goring quote. One is titled: “US Power Grid Vulnerable to Foreign Hacks”... and the other is called: “China is Fueling a Drug War Against the U.S.” – both clearly illustrate Goring's point of the importance (for 'power') of creating threats that require the

people to rally behind 'their' state. But when we discuss the supposed 'threats'... at a glance they dissipate back into the ether from which they were snatched. When Goring says "...of course the people don't want war..." he could as truthfully have said "...of course the people don't want their Sisters and Brothers in other lands to experience a power outage... why would they?"... and "...of course the people don't want their Brothers and Sisters in other lands to become drug addicted... why would they?" But the thrust of both articles is that there are 'evil states' that... for some reason never explained... do want this... that... for some reason never explained... states must persist in a constant state of competition. Clearly... then... states are worse than superfluous... they are engines of destruction. Now that we have the Internet... let's discuss this and plan our alternative.

We have Sisters and Brothers in other lands driven to armed struggle in self-defense (which 'power'... of course... counts on... in the last analysis...) because they don't have the means to shut down the 'global economy' for a day – we do... it's called the Global General Strike... and it develops... and is... the building consciousness of all of us (we're not talking about cavalier acts... but rather a strategy that builds numbers methodically...) we could spare them lost blood and loved ones... we could stand with them... and with ourselves... such that our beliefs and our behavior are finally in consonance.

'Power' plants its seeds of 'rule' continuously in the next generation. We should be asking ourselves how we can begin to plant the seeds of Freedom... which... once flung wide in these global-discussion-times will secure it for Ever.

It is mind-boggling to consider that by abdicating our responsibility to love our common treasures: our earth and our lives... we have handed these treasures over to the most damaged and sociopathic among us. It is simply by their claiming the 'economic' turf that this has been accomplished... by their claiming the 'wide'-vantage of the globe itself as their purview.

'De-commissioning the global-system'... then... must simultaneously be about reclaiming this turf... our re-defined 'economic' – within and for our movement for freedom.

—

[“160110rewriteaccurately_6.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

If someone who has turned into this kind of a person [a person who has been forced to develop a false 'self'... dominated by the principle of 'obedience'...] becomes a father himself, he will be confronted with a situation that threatens the whole structure he has taken such pains to erect: he sees before him a child full of life, sees how a human being is meant to be, how *he* could have been if obstacles hadn't been placed in his way. But his fears are soon activated: this cannot be allowed to happen. If the child were allowed to stay as he is, wouldn't that mean that the father's sacrifices and self-denial weren't really necessary? Is it possible to have a child turn our well without forcing him to be obedient, without breaking his will, without combating his egoism and willfulness, as we have been told to do for centuries? Parents cannot permit themselves to ask these questions. To do so would cause no end of trouble, and they would be deprived of the sure ground provided by an inherited ideology that places the highest value on suppressing and manipulating vital spontaneity. A.'s father found himself in this same position. [The footnote appended to this reads: “The mother had also grown up with this ideology. I do not discuss her here because the faith A. was compelled to hold in spite of the doubts he felt was an important factor in his case and this was connected primarily with his father.”]

He tried to make his son control his bodily functions while still an infant, and he succeeded in having him internalize this control at a very early age. He helped the mother to toilet train him as an infant, and by distracting him “in a loving way” taught him to wait patiently to be fed, so that feedings were kept to an exact schedule. When A. was still very little and didn't like something he was given to eat or ate “too greedily” or “misbehaved,” he was put in a corner, where he had to watch his parents calmly finish eating their meal. It may be that the child in the corner was serving as a surrogate for his father, who had been sent away to Europe as a child and who had wondered what sins he had committed to cause him to be taken so far away from his beloved parents.

A. did not remember ever being struck by his father. Nevertheless, without meaning to and without realizing it, the father treated his child just as cruelly as he treated the child within himself – in order to make a “contented child” out of him. He systematically tried to destroy everything that was vital in his firstborn. If the remnants of vitality had not taken refuge in an obsessional neurosis and from there sent out a call for help, then the son would indeed have been psychically dead, for he was only a pale shadow of his father, had no needs of his own, and no longer had any spontaneous feelings. All he knew were a

depressing emptiness and fear of his obsessions. In analysis he learned for the first time, at the age of forty-two, what a vital, curious, intelligent, lively, and humorous child he had actually been. This child was now able to come alive in him and develop his creative powers. A. gradually came to realize that his severe symptoms were, on the one hand, the result of the repression of important vital aspects of his self and, on the other, a reflection of his father's un-lived, unconscious conflicts. The father's fragile piety and his split-off, unacknowledged doubts were revealed in the son's tormenting obsessions. If the father had been able to face his doubts consciously, come to terms with them, and integrate them, his son would have been freed of having to grow up with them and could have had a full life of his own at a much earlier age and without the help of analysis.

[When she says: "face his doubts consciously..." we could as well describe this as "facing our questions consciously..." and... when she says he should then "come to terms with them..." is this not placing them in the most accurate context? (and where does 're-experiencing the suppressed rage' come in?...) which explains and so answers them?... re-writing... in a sense... our stories... our personal one... and the story of human beings under 'class'... who have been subjected to Authority... – P.S.]

[“160110rousseauism_7.mp3”:]

Pedagogy Fills the Needs of Parents, Not of Children

[And as we read what follows we should keep in mind that... as the parent is the 'deputy of the state' – per Bentham's advice to 'power' (i.e.... we are talking conscious planning here (and that's a significant piece... part... of our ability to recover our full selves... – we'll be thinking more about this...) on the part of the 'single Mind' that 'power' allows to exist under 'class': it's...) – it is *the state* that is benefitting... 'getting its needs met'... not the parents. But what we should also keep in mind is that as we reverse this condition: the condition that only 'power' is able to act consciously – albeit megalomaniacally – only 'power' determines the design of our global society... while all the rest of us are required to remain *un-conscious*... unaware of what is happening to us... required to accept the imposition of a constant state of paralysis of our thought-process – that as we reverse this... the 'class'-system is de-commissioned... – P.S.]

The reader will have noticed long before now that all pedagogy is pervaded by the precepts of “poisonous pedagogy,” no matter how well they may be concealed today. Since the books of Ekkehard von Braunmühl unmistakably expose the absurdity and cruelty of the pedagogical approach in today's world, I need only call attention to them here. Perhaps the reason it is difficult for me to share his optimism is that I regard the idealization of one's own childhood as a major, unconscious obstacle to learning for parents. [Listening to the audio of this... it strikes me that this could be the largest unconscious question – perhaps 'childhood's (under 'class') chief legacy: unnoticed (by adults) suffering... pain... loneliness... whether suppressed or recalled – sets the pattern for its acceptance one's life-long... (this may be relevant for our discussion in our next show... – P.S.)

My antipedagogic position is not directed against a specific type of pedagogical ideology but against all pedagogical ideology per se, even if it is of an anti-authoritarian nature. This attitude is based on insights that I shall describe shortly. For now, I should simply like to point out that my position has nothing in common with a Rousseauistic optimism about human “nature.”

First of all, I do not see a child as growing up in some abstract “state of nature” but in the concrete surroundings of care givers whose unconscious exerts a substantial influence on the child's development.

Second, Rousseau's [Jean-Jacques... (1712 – 1778...) he who *literally* abandoned all five of his children... “deposited them at foundling homes...” over the mother's protests... – P.S.] pedagogy is profoundly manipulative. This does not always seem to be recognized by educators, but it has been convincingly demonstrated and documented by Braunmühl. One of his numerous examples is the following passage from *Emile* (Book II):

Take an opposite route with your pupil; always let him think he is the master, but always be it yourself. There is no more perfect form of subjection than the one that preserves the appearance of freedom [Whoa... that pulled me up short – it is almost as if Bentham (1748 – 1832)... reading this... made it his goal... and worked backward from it... – P.S.]; thus does the will itself become captive. The poor child, who knows nothing, can do nothing, and has no experience – is he not at your mercy? ['Manipulative' don't even begin to touch it... this is pure sadism here... – P.S.] Are you not in control of everything in his environment that relates to him? Can you not control his impressions as you please? His tasks, his games, his pleasures, his troubles – is all this not in your hands without his knowing it? [Recall Hitler's “It also gives us a very

special, secret pleasure to see how unaware the people around us are of what is really happening to them.” This is 'power'... this Plato-derived... abandonment-driven... longing to be 'in control'... totally... and... beyond this... in its totally misanthropic obsession... – P.S.] Doubtlessly, he may do as he wishes, but he may wish only what you want him to; he may not take a single step that you have not anticipated,, he may not open his mouth without your knowing what he is going to say. [These are folk... themselves made puppets as infants... obsessed with doing the same to us... *ad infinitum*... – P.S.]

[“160110freedommeansnopowerguys_8.mp3”:]

I am convinced of the harmful effects of training for the following reason: all advice that pertains to raising children betrays more or less clearly the numerous, variously clothed needs of the *adult*. Fulfillment of these needs not only discourages the child's development but actually prevents it. This also holds true when the adult is honestly convinced of acting in the child's best interests.

Among the adult's true motives we find:

1. The unconscious need to pass on to others the humiliation one has undergone oneself
2. The need to find an outlet for repressed affect
3. The need to possess and have at one's disposal a vital object to manipulate
4. Self-defense: i.e., the need to idealize one's childhood and one's parents by dogmatically applying the parents' pedagogical principles to one's own children
5. Fear of freedom
6. Fear of the reappearance of what one has repressed, which one reencounters in one's child and must try to stamp out, having killed it in oneself earlier
7. Revenge for the pain one has suffered

Since at least one of the points enumerated here is present in everyone's upbringing [under 'class'... – P.S.], the child-rearing process is at best suitable for making “good” pedagogues out of its objects. However, it will never be able to help its charges to remain vital. When children are trained, they learn now to train others in turn. Children who are lectured to, learn how to lecture; if they are admonished, they learn how to admonish; if scolded, they learn how to scold; [now this can be hard for us to hear if we don't know what to do with it... if we're trapped in designed-to-trap circumstances that *require* the forfeiture of our lives... – this is the context in which we are exploring her insights... – P.S.] if scolded, they learn how to scold; if ridiculed, they learn how to ridicule; if humiliated, they learn how to humiliate; if their psyche is killed, they will learn how to kill – the only question is who will be killed: oneself, others, or both.

All this does not mean that children should be raised without any restraints. Crucial for healthy development is the respect of their care givers, tolerance for their feelings, awareness of their needs and grievances, and authenticity on the part of their parents, whose own freedom – and not pedagogical considerations – sets natural limits for children.

[And here we must take a closer look at what may be an unconscious assumption in Alice's use of the word 'freedom' – emphasizing how critically important it is (and our discussion of Proudhon should help us with this...) for us to develop our own lexicon: in a conscious process of coming up with our own definitions – although I may be reading too much into her casual use of the word... or into the translation... But... a closer look at this one word could be useful in clarifying what distinguishes “the peoples' lexicon...”

It seems to me that with this point: “Crucial for [the] healthy development [of our children...] is... authenticity on the part of their parents, whose own freedom... sets natural limits for children...” – we are misled by the word 'freedom'... and that

using it suggests an unconscious endorsement of the stance of the global-statesmen that we can... and should... embrace a personal definition of the word... Considering this point could help us see the importance of qualities – of our resistance... of our transition... and of our freedom – that we emphasize frequently on these pages: 'wholism' (which... in the last chapter of *Waking Up*... I argued meant a coherent inter-weaving of our values based in 'reverence' – for the ancestors... the earth... and each other – throughout all aspects of our lives... in the world of our making...) and 'seeing from the vantage of the whole'. In fact... we will be arguing that 'de-commissioning the system' must mean: Recovering what 'power' has taken from us – all that it has suppressed... Developing our (personal) thought-process as we develop (collectively with 'the people') our own definitions... Claiming the global-vantage: in analyzing our (political and historical) situation... and in planning and action for our freedom... and in the transition to it... and then continuously Seeing our thought develop: by writing down our questions and the thoughts that come from our discussions...

Her use of 'freedom' suggests either the 'power'-approved sense of 'personal freedom' – i.e. 'freedom to do as one wishes...' – or what the 'personal' sense unconsciously manifests or expresses: the assumption that hidden-'power' doesn't exist... that the world is *not* controlled by a global-elite who have been systematically tightening their noose of control around our necks ever since the French Revolution...

...the assumption that 'freedom' is a variable thing... depending on 'local'... 'national'... and one's 'personal'... conditions – but that... regardless of these 'natural' limits... we must be 'honest' with our children about what we want... as we respect their needs within the context of respecting our own. None of which asks us to consider that we *cannot* “respect our own needs” within the context of 'class'.

In the end... this approach abdicates our responsibility to challenge the global totalitarian system – which is what 'class' is – undermining from within her stated objective to ensure that every child retains his or her authentic 'self'... without interference from adults... – and most particularly not from ten thousand guys... who want to be gods... – P.S.]

[The January 10, 2016 show ends here.]

—

The January 17, 2016 show –

["160117hightechauschwitz_1.mp3":]

A couple updates before we begin: first... long story short... I slipped in the mud early Saturday AM and my left wrist is out of commission... typing two-handed is out for a bit (although I'm typing one-handed as of the twentieth...) and the show goes on... and its resulting audio will go up...

...second update: and yes it's to do with EMF-weapons... as well as relating to a question I've been pondering. For the past two weeks (starting with the 'New Year' actually...) 'they've' been using a 'new' (to my experience...) pretty heavy-duty EMF-weapon on me... it produces a mucus so thick my head and chest actually feel fused into solid blocks with it... and produces as well an even nastier taste in my mouth than the metal taste the EMF assaults have left in their wake up to now... – it feels like I've been poisoned. I'm getting to my point: I'd been wondering why 'they' devote so many resources to 'hitting' me on the way to... and at... Lakeside Park every morning... and a recent article – the January 12, 2016 *New York Times* piece: “Merger Will Create a Giant in Drugs for Rare Diseases”... suggests an explanation: one of the 'diseases' they mention is named 'HAE'... which stands for “hereditary angio (heart) edema” – “abnormal accumulation of fluid in the tissue spaces, cavities or joint capsules of the body...” – a description that almost fits with the effects of EMF-weapons... if you set aside the ear-ringing... and the head-burning sensation... and the electrical-paralysis of the muscles after receiving your assault in bed... – and let's not forget the de-toxification regimen needed to recover... So... yes... corporations are eager to believe in the supposed endless inflatability of their money... but 'power' cares more about plausible deniability... and my walking for an hour daily don't fit with the 'disease'-story they're concocting... and they need to cover their ass on the symptoms I've been reporting... as what they're doing to me I'm convinced is part of an on-going project we could call 'High-Tech Auschwitz'.

—

["160117offthechartshubris_2.mp3":]

The January 17, 2016 show – themes and things: “What thoughts and practices could deliver us from the trap of the false notions of 'class'... and by what process would this happen?...” in which discussion we will... “revisit concepts (from our May 17, 2015 show...) one being the necessary role (in our process of reacquisition of the 'authentic self'...) of the 'emphatic partner'... and the other being “the trauma of 'class'”... We'll consider what these concepts mean for our building that critical mass of committed folk working to 'de-commission the global-system...'” and... “given that our conditioning is (in a sense...) the 'whole of it'... the whole of the matter of our containment (under 'class'...) and given that the gaps between *our* 'understanding-of-what-is-happening'... and 'power's... and between *our* 'certainty' – our confidence in ourselves and our belief in our right to our unhindered movement in the world – and 'power's – as 'power' has established a grossly disproportionate 'advantage' in technological... military... and psychological means... as well as an extreme gap ethically... – i.e.... given our absolute dependence... we ever exist in a constant state of extreme risk of being harmed in their arbitrary process... euphemistically known as 'management' of us and the planet (all of these being... essentially... gaps between our sense of *our* capabilities and the off-the-charts-hubris of 'power'...)” So... “how do we address these disproportions?... what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 10... pages 65 – 70)

[“160117seethrfalseprotest_3.mp3”:]

January 11, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: Thoughts to be sorted... they are a bit random and will likely be replaced by others that more clearly shed light on the questions we're been following – primarily the questions to do with our transition... de-commissioning the 'global-system' – which does not mean 'chaos'... but “the blossoming of 'the peoples' cooperation...” (at long last and hallelujah!):

- In *Waking Up* I argued that we have to prepare now for the (manufactured) 'crises' they will inevitably throw at us once enough of us are waking up... This is even more true to the degree we nullify their 'agent-provocateur-strategy' (which we do... minimally... by letting our goal lead... which should sort them out of our organizing efforts (and into the community to snipe at us there...)) “Letting our goal lead” means keeping our eyes on the prize of human beings freed globally – freed from the compulsions of Necessity... and from all forms of coercion... in the global-society of *our* making... and by employing the principle of 'utility': by asking of everything we do: “how does this lead to our goal of global freedom?...”) We must ask ourselves not just how we nullify a strategy of agent-infiltration of (and implementation of invented / staged...) movements (e.g.... at this point in the development of our understanding... any 'fix-the-state'-based movement must be seen... not just as an ill-informed strategy... but as a conscious attempt to either 'pied-piper' our resistance down fruitless paths... or turn public opinion against the very notion of resistance... for instance... this was the “quotation of the day” from 15-year-old Ashlie in the *New York Times* of January 13, 2016... about an “armed occupation” in Oregon: “I just want them to go home, so that I can feel safe...”) but also how to nullify 'power's strategy – that key tactic of 'power' across the ages of 'class' – of creating 'crises'... if our movement for freedom starts to grow...

[“160117betrayalofrueself_4.mp3”:]

- These 'power'-staged events (armed occupations... e.g....) are going to be happening more and more to the degree that we wake up. So we are going to have to think about how to nullify 'power's strategy of creating crises in order to refocus the eyes of our Brothers and Sisters back on them... the global-state-statesmen if our movement starts to build momentum...
- Recall Alice telling us that we don't question that which is a continuation of our childhood. What are the essential qualities of our childhood under 'class?: Dependence... Coercion... Obedience training or... training to be 'of service'... 'Utilitarianism' (which... in our opposing... we are sharing Alice's anti-pedagogical position...) and so ultimately... a key characteristic: Performance – relinquishment of the authentic 'self' or 'self-betrayal'... and so Duplicity or dishonesty... These are qualities that weaken our spirit... cause erosion of it... and deepen the loss of vitality that stems from the betrayal of our true 'self'...
- And I'm mulling something Alice said in our last show (in the audio-file: “160110rousseauism_7.mp3”):

Perhaps the reason it is difficult for me to share [Ekkehard von Braunmuhl's] optimism [who exposed that “all pedagogy is pervaded by the precepts of 'poisonous pedagogy'”] is that I regard the idealization of one's own childhood as a major, unconscious obstacle to learning for parents.

Listening to this audio again... it strikes me that this dynamic could represent the largest unconscious question: the gap between what our body knows... and what 'our' head (the mind of 'power'...) says... and that this legacy of (unconscious) uncertainty – perhaps 'childhood's (under 'class') chief legacy: unnoticed (by adults) suffering... pain... loneliness... whether suppressed or recalled – sets the pattern for its acceptance one's life-long...

[“160117regainingselves_5.mp3”:]

- The 'right story' that we need to regain our process of thinking authentically... our thought-process... includes includes debunking the 'economy-con'... right down to its roots in the home...
- The threat that the global-state-statesmen pose to us is essentially militaristic... given their adherence to Plato's 'dictum' that the 'master class' must achieve and preserve absolute military dominance over 'the people' (and this obviously includes technological superiority and within this a monopoly on supreme surveillance technology...)
- Feelings and thoughts are one (from the December 27, 2015 show...) – if feelings and thoughts are one... and... as Alice says... our suppressed anger from our early childhood experience of being *forced* must be tapped into and re-experienced consciously... what does all of this mean for regaining our thought-process?
- The Global General Strike is 'the people' as the experience of 'the infinite'... 'the infinite' being that experience that we come to the world with... which immediately is challenged by the global 'class'-system... and so what does all of this mean?

[“160117weneednomanagement_6.mp3”:]

In our October 25, 2015 show... we said that as we 'make ourselves' – both individually and collectively... constituting ourselves as 'a people' made of fully-developing individualities – we 'un-make' them – the 'power'-guys: “command exists but with obedience...” as George Eliot said...

...and we meant this psychologically no less than materially... we cited Karl Popper's point that Plato advised... essentially... lying to the children (of the elite) such that they would come to believe in their inherent superiority... they must be certain... said he... that they have nothing in common with the broad generality... and steel themselves to be ruthless... unbending... firm... in their enforcement of their “management-right” over us. (Why is it that has never occurred to us to talk about? It's so glaringly wrong... and in our face... and invisible... like the EMF-weapons they dispose of us with... those they deem superfluous...) And because these Tiny Few (.0001 per cent at best of the global population...) aggregated tremendous means – those means being our blood... sweat... tears... and love (and the earth's generally) converted into that noose of control around our neck (the economy... – I mean it's quite obvious that a privatized earth means we can't feed ourselves... that this is not immediately perceived as its purpose speaks volumes on the con job they've done on us... and their tight control of the media...) we let them get away with it...with asserting this 'right-of-management' over us... as... key among these resources they hoard are the means to control the thoughts we think...

...we said that as we... as we acquire the thoughts that 'power' kept from us – i.e.... the truth – and... with them (it)... through the discussions we organize with our Brothers and Sisters... gain certainty of our beauty and goodness... and of the full and sufficient – for working together cooperatively and 'managing' ourselves – scope of our talents... abilities... and gifts... the global-state-statesmen simply... dissipate back into the ether from which they composed themselves: out of smoke from Plato's pipe.

We've also said (in the May 17, 2015 show...) that both Bentham and De Tocqueville were in agreement that we-the-people must be so composed (educated) as to be 'happy' with our condition of being managed and limited... as to be 'managed' goes against our nature... which is to be 'big'... self-creative...

[“150517weneedtheopensociety.mp3”:]

De Tocqueville and Bentham saw this need of we-the-people's to speak... to break out of 'power's imposed constraints (and the French Revolution showed them this in spades [blades]...) – saw it would never cease. So the issue for both of them became... how to control it... this ceaseless attempt... Both of them... and the current crop of global-state-statesmen are in fundamental agreement... both of them believed that this need of ours can only be controlled by

“controlling the thoughts we can think...” to do which requires 'closely-monitoring and managing' us... i.e.... requires the nation-state system... Nikola Tesla... on the other hand... worked in the opposite direction... And not he alone... obviously... Karl Popper and Miklos Nyiszli and W.E.B. Du Bois and Bob Marley and Bruce Lee and Alice Miller and Zora Neale Hurston and Peter Kropotkin (to name but a few examples) all represent for greater openness... all work to see the 'open society' become a reality... Nikola worked tirelessly for the day – and we are in that day – when the technology would exist to allow our thought to blossom... and we could provide each other the mutual aid needed for a world... and a global humanity... premised on Freedom.

[“160117overcomefalsenotions_7.mp3”:]

...but the Miniscule Few believe they can *install*... manufacture *for us*... the “greatest 'happiness'...” and so work against this... and are organized... possess tremendous resources in aggregate... and have a plan... hatched in the aftermath of the French Revolution... which consists in constructing our psyches such... that we would exchange freedom for containment... accept strict limits on us as necessary 'protection' to allow 'happiness' to flourish (or at least 'safety' from 'evil-doers'...) which... if our 'go-along' with this were definitively achieved... would manifest in physical reality... in the broader society... that condition which Rousseau recommended for the pupil (and by extension all dependent subjects): acceptance of the absolute dominance of 'the master' (class).

Given all this... what are the thoughts and practices that would free us of the weight of all of it? If dependence... obedience... betrayal... performance... duplicity... is our experience of childhood in 'class'-society... and so form the basis of our assumption about 'being' itself... – how do we begin to overcome these false notions... such that we can reclaim our original 'selves'?

[“160117consciousofclasstrauma_8.mp3”:]

Recall also in this May 17, 2015 show that we heard this from Alice:

[“150517traumaofclass.mp3”:]

...Repetition is the language used by a child who has remained dumb, his only means of expressing himself. A dumb child needs a particularly emphatic partner if he is to be understood at all. Speech, on the other hand, is often used less to express genuine feelings and thoughts than to hide, veil, or deny them, and thus to express the false self. And so there often are long periods in our work with our patients during which we are dependent on their compulsion to repeat – for this repetition is then the only manifestation of their true self. It lays the basis for the transference, and also for the whole *mise en scene* of the patient's field of interaction, which in the literature is described as acting out and is often met with mistrust. (Alice Miller, *Prisoners of Childhood*, p. 78 - 9)

...and we argued that our experience of 'class' is itself a trauma that needs to be experienced consciously... and integrated into our personalities (can we experience 'class' as a trauma consciously if we have not first experienced the abuse we were subjected to as infants and small children consciously? – we're going to be trying to sort that out as we work toward building numbers of folk committed to working for global human freedom...) such that we can become 'fully-developing individualities'... as opposed to manifestations of 'power's priorities:

Consigning us to the role 'wage labor' is a trauma... because it requires us to cut off huge trunks of ourselves... with no one confirming that that's what's going on... So it is a wound that never gets defined as a wound... and leads to endless confusion – the original trauma of a coerced-work system. What if “the story that one does not know...” is “the loss of the infinite...” that we all possess: “That what they have not – that which they possess –” (Shakespeare's *The Rape of Lucrece*, line 135)... – P.S.]

...and we asked: “if 'we-the-people' – the nation – are the child... who... what... might be... the “emphatic partner”?... by which word... 'emphatic'... I take it she means... strong... in possession of certainty... And what does it mean?... being the emphatic partner? – voicing those original suppressed thoughts? What does it mean to be the psychic support of our Brothers and Sisters in our common process of healing from the wounds of 'class'? We're going to be thinking again about these questions... especially in terms of the kinds of 'safe spaces' we want to establish...

Has the progression of our analysis since May shed light on these questions? I ask because in the psychic safety of our organizing spaces lies our successful confrontation with the trauma of 'class'.

[“160117coercedworksystem_9.mp3”:]

We have been kept silent... our voices haven't been used for exposing and exploring our truth... rather... as Alice says... they have been used to hide from... and conceal... and deny... our truth...

...and because of the problem of our having been trained to be 'of service' – the generalized imposition of the mindset of utilitarianism – known as 'economics' in 'modern' language... even when we attempt to address social ills and inequities... we ourselves... our personal dilemma of lost vitality and our omnipresent subjection to compulsions within and without... are never put in that picture of the 'unfairness of society'... firstly... because to do so might mean we are 'weak' – and we are all trained to identify with 'power'... and secondly... because we are trained to believe that *we* don't matter. So this mindset we have been calling 'power's – the mindset of Plato's Tribe – has infected us all... *this* is 'the state' in us... this insidiousness we none of us even see... because the totalitarianism of 'class' means... that gross unfairness has become our premise for 'being'.

If the problem is our silencing... that we lost our voices in adopting the inauthentic (i.e.... not ours... not the voice we came with... out of 'the infinite'...) the false... voice of 'power'... what happens when we see our childhood dilemma – never before expressed – acted out before us?... hear it spoken out loud?

And we should also factor into this discussion... first... that 'the family' is an uneven 'conditioner' of 'class'... an uneven sculptor of the psyches of we-commoners... i.e.... for some more than others 'power's attempts at manipulation are transparent... some are eager to be part of a critical mass for global-freedom... and second... the coerced-work system is the linch-pin of the global-'class' system... the linch-pin of their control... and the coerced-work system is in its process of disintegration.

[“160117lifeisreturning_10.mp3”:]

“Reflections of '3.7': the October 25, 2015 Show”:

O... how the Eye of 'power' can hypnotize...
O... how its field does magnetize...
O... how we... with its thoughts... are occupied...
O... how it draws us...
...in the absence of our own thoughts...
...around... and around... and around...

But...
...the strength of the Eye opposed to the power of life... must... inevitably... subside...

While...

O... how our own thoughts grow...
O... how our vision broadens its scope...
O... how vivid are we...
O... how our love and longing flows once set free...
...fed by the true power of life... drawing to itself its like...

So... the center that coerces cannot hold...
...a field fed by force must inevitably lose its source...
...do you see?...
...its single Eye is cloudy...
...while we are swinging free...

...further... and further... out...
...of its orbit...
...seeing each other... finally...
...life... suppressed... is returning unfettered... and afresh...

[“160117usingchildren_11.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

...Crucial for [the] healthy development [of children] is the respect of their care givers, tolerance for their feelings, awareness of their needs and grievances, and authenticity on the part of their parents, whose own freedom – and not pedagogical considerations – sets natural limits for children.

It is this last point that causes great difficulty for parents and pedagogues, for the following reasons:

First... If parents have had to learn very early in life to ignore their feelings, not to take them seriously, to scorn or ridicule them, then they will lack the sensitivity required to deal successfully with their children. As a result, they will try to substitute pedagogical principles as prostheses. Thus, under certain circumstances they may be reluctant to show tenderness for fear of spoiling the child, or, in other cases, they will hide their hurt feelings behind the Fourth Commandment.

Second... Parents who never learned as children to be aware of their own needs or to defend their own interests because this right was never granted them will be uncertain in this regard for the rest of their life and consequently will become dependent on firm pedagogical rules. [Her insights... so critical for us to discuss and grasp have been suppressed... because to discuss them would call into question the entire 'class'-system... – P.S.] This uncertainty, regardless of whether it appears in sadistic or masochistic guise, leads to great insecurity in the child in spite of these rules. An example of this: a father who was trained to be obedient at a very early age may on occasion take cruel and violent measures to force his child to be obedient in order to satisfy his own need to be respected for the first time in his life. But this behavior does not exclude intervening periods of masochistic behavior when the same father will put up with anything the child does, because he never learned to define the limits of his tolerance. Thus, his guilt feelings over the preceding unjust punishment will suddenly lead him to be unusually permissive, thereby awakening anxiety in the child, who cannot tolerate uncertainty about the father's true face. The child's increasingly aggressive behavior will finally provoke the father into losing his temper. In the end, the child then takes on the role of the sadistic opponent in place of the grandparents, but with the difference that the father can now gain the upper hand. Such situations, in which the child “goes too far,” prove to the pedagogue that disciplining and punishment are necessary.

Third... Since a child is often used as a substitute for one's own parents, he or she can become the object of an endless number of contradictory wishes and expectations that cannot possibly be fulfilled. In extreme cases, psychosis, drug addiction, or suicide may be the only solution. But often the child's feeling of helplessness leads to increasingly aggressive behavior, which in turn convinces parents and educators of the need for strict countermeasures.

Fourth... A similar situation arises when it is drilled into children, as it was in the anti-authoritarian upbringing of the sixties, to adopt certain ways of behavior that their parents wished had once been allowed them and that they therefore consider to be universally desirable. In the process, the child's real needs can be totally overlooked. In one case I know, for example, a child who was feeling sad was encouraged to shatter a glass when what she most wanted to do was to climb up onto her mother's lap. If children go on feeling misunderstood and manipulated like this, they will become genuinely confused and justifiably aggressive.

[“160117nopedagogyrequired_12.mp3”:]

In contrast to generally accepted beliefs and to the horror of pedagogues, I cannot attribute any positive significance to the word *pedagogy*. I see it as self-defense on the part of adults, as manipulation deriving from their own lack of freedom and their insecurity, which I can certainly understand, although I cannot overlook the inherent dangers. I can also understand why criminals are sent to prison, but I cannot see that deprivation of freedom and prison life, which is geared wholly to conformity, subordination, and submissiveness, can really contribute to the betterment, i.e., the development of the prisoner. There is in

the word *pedagogy* the suggestion of certain goals that the charge is meant to achieve – and this limits his or her possibilities for development from the start. But an honest rejection of all forms of manipulation and of the idea of setting goals does not mean that one simply leaves children to their own devices. For children need a large measure of emotional and physical *support* from the adult. This support must include the following elements if they are to develop their full potential [so we see in some of the assumptions she is making... a degree of ambivalence about 'class' society... a degree of... denial... perhaps?... about the full scope of the abuse she is documenting... and its roots in a 'system' that *requires* our dispossession... Essential elements of our support of children: – P.S.]

First: Respect for the child

Second: Respect for his rights

Third: Tolerance for his feelings

Fourth: Willingness to learn from his behavior:

- a) About the nature of the individual child
- b) About the child in the parents themselves
- c) About the nature of emotional life, which can be observed much more clearly in the child than in the adult because the child can experience his feelings more intensely and, optimally, more undisguisedly than an adult

[The January 17, 2016 show ends here.]

—

["160124functionariesofthestate_1.mp3":]

The January 24, 2016 show – themes and things: Continues themes we've been developing: "What thoughts and practices could deliver us from the trap of the false notions of 'class'... what are the questions that could initiate these discussions?... and... "what 'all' is involved in regaining our 'selves': breaking out of the mindset of 'service'..." and... "making 'power's implied 'management-right' over us subject to discussion..." and... "shouldn't there be an 'honesty-right-of-life' that supersedes the 'right-of-rule'?" and... "Breaking out of the Panopticon globally – working together across nation to: develop our anti-coercion positions and pledge... design and implement our self-management practices... and build alliances for challenging the management-right of states..." and: "what more can we do to ensure that: "Love RULES" (Part 11... pages 72 – 77)

January 20, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: I've said it before... I'll likely say it again: 'power's use of weapons-technology to control dissent... limit population... and 'manage' our heads – determine what thoughts we think – only works by targeting singly those who challenge this thought-control... by returning to our thought-process the alternative vision of suppressed ancestors... those who expose hidden-'power' and the cons by which it maintains its domination... and who offer us clear alternatives to 'power's global 'system' – it only works by picking us off one-by-one... provoking fear in those who remain... and then suppressing the existence of the attempt – or re-writing the story of it – such that subsequent generations see 'class'... 'hierarchy'... decision-making-by-the-few... as the only possible way to 'manage' 'our' 'complex' 'modern' 'society'.

Notice the quotation marks in each of those immediately preceding words – there to signal the presence of a lie. Notice that everything about the made-world of 'class' we are born into is a lie. When we accept 'power's presumptive 'management-right' over us... we must know that 'power' will lie to us... given the massive 'power'-disparity (and their determination to maintain it...) and the contempt for us implied in it. But how can we develop humanity *for life* if we have nothing honest around us to work with our entire lives? Shouldn't there be an 'honesty-right-of-life' that supersedes the 'right-of-rule' (which is another way of referring to 'power's 'management-right' of us...)?

Alice says we must 'respect the child'... where in the above do we see that happening?... where in our sacrifice of dissent – and so a thought-process that is authentic – and in our capitulation to fear and dishonesty... does 'respect for the child' come in? Can it be that we don't see that we are betraying our children?... in every possible way... when we teach them they exist... not for themselves... but to be functionaries of the state?...

—

["160124thepunishment_2.mp3":]

Can it be that we don't see that we are betraying our children?... in every possible way... when we teach them they exist... not for themselves... but to be functionaries of the state?... and of 'the market'... when we teach them... by our example if not overtly... to obey bosses... and to respond to money as a trigger of our behavior... Combine that training with material ('economic') dependence... and we get fascism.

A bit of thought and this conclusion is obvious... but I must admit... until I became a target... because of my dissent... until I had no choice but to see how easily large numbers of folks could be turned into trackers and hounders of me... convinced to participate in my being extra-legally assaulted... this possibility never occurred to me. As I type this... on January 22... I'm full into the effects of being 'hit' (without cessation... all week...) by this 'latest' EMF-weapon they are using on me (amended... I'm convinced... with some element [metal?... in the air...?] that makes the mucus congeal into oatmeal-colored and thickened clots...) which 'they' seem poised to release on the general population... with doctors alerted about a new health-concern – HAE – and the pharmaceuticals ready with their 'drug relief' – designer-drugs for a designer-disease... I'm curious as to its story... and ETA... when did it arrive on the scene?... and... more and more I'm becoming convinced that the drones are primarily used as cameras and processing and sending data to some weapon... located... where?) my head feels like a solid block of mucus... my chest likewise... and... once I get back from uploading this pdf it will require hours of loosening and clearing to ameliorate... while simultaneously being subjected to more of the same... 'punishment'...

["160124endowmentofjoy_3.mp3":]

None of the above is what we want... but it is inevitably what we will get when we accept 'power's 'right-of-management'...

...when what we want... is good fellowship... globally... Good fellowship is what our children expect when they come to us... it is an expression of our experience of 'the infinite'... The good fellowship of an honest world is what they must get... if we are to make our beliefs and our acts coalesce... and if we believe that our children deserve our respect.

Our children have every reason to be justifiably furious at us – every single one of us... under 'class'. Had we not prevented their 'true self's development they would ask themselves (and those who are thinking authentically may be asking...) “what *have* they been doing all this time? What were they *thinking*? Didn't they see the monumental... myriad small and large... hypocrisies with which they surround themselves... and us?” – and of course the true history... the hidden history of behind-scenes machinations... the genocidal slaughter of us in constructed conflicts too numerous to count... with the result being the end of our global mobilizations for freedom – this explanation – i.e.... the truth – is never told them.

["160124permanentblankcheck_4.mp3":]

We have been thinking through how it came to be that we believe it 'just' that we submit to 'management'... Alice explains that we don't question that which is a continuation of childhood... that which is a continuation of our experience in the home... in which... until fairly recently... women and children had imposed on them absolute 'subject'-status vis-a-vis the man... and subject-status is still the case for children... for whom any authentic improvement in status... such that their subject status would end... would seal the fate of 'the system'...

If we were to ask ourselves why we accept subject-status for any of us... but especially for the children... many rationalizations would come in response... but they would all boil down to... coercion – i.e.... we feel we have no alternative. We have been using this space of the radio discussions to explore whether that's the case... whether 'class' exhausts the possible global social arrangements... and whether there is a way to confront global-'power' successfully... and after considered study with the ancestors who long for generalized human freedom... and after consulting our hearts and engaging our authentic thought-process... have been led to the clear conclusion that we have been both intentionally kept separate from each other (so we couldn't discuss the implications of our putting our lives in the hands of a Miniscule Few who view us as material to be used...) and lied to. Even the shallowest probe of our sincerest heart and mind requires this honest assessment: that superior force in the hands of those who benefit from our subjection to them means not only that our subjection (our remaining forever children...) will continue *ad infinitum*... but that we will be... and have been... subjected to continuous manipulation... –

because 'power' exists for itself... not us... and because it despises the 'weak'... and because its 'power' is unchecked by any repercussions for its abusiveness.

Consider: if they can *create* crises – whether personal health disasters or broader social catastrophes – and get us to pay for them... where does this lead?... in terms of the material 'sculpt' and shape of this social world premised on subjection... on 'rule'? Let's think this through... let's do the math and picture it... Let's consider what it means to put the definition of our 'freedom' in the hands of 'keepers' of us. Isn't it issuing a permanent blank-check by the very terms of our existence under 'class'? Can we see that 'power' has concocted one scheme after another to bring about massive transfers of wealth... from the vast 'us' into their pockets... with the inevitable result being the widening of disparities – i.e.... as our Good Three said (plus Claudia Von Werlhof [see the April 5, 2015 show...]) the pauperization of all of us (minus the Tiny [in spirit no less than numbers...]) Ten Thousand...

[“160124outofthepanopticon_5.mp3”:]

If they have no management-right over us... then we need to support that as an anti-coercion principle between us... “Breaking out of the 'Panopticon' globally...” means affirming our right to have access to each other and support each other... in order to both develop our personal gifts maximally as well as develop our social gifts maximally... through the design and implementation of self-management practices... We start by developing anti-coercion positions and pledges (this relates to the point we've been making – an extension of Alice's – that we have to experience the trauma of 'class' consciously – which encompasses the abusiveness of child-rearing – and integrate it into our personalities... on the road to reclaiming our 'selves' and thinking authentically...) And we start by sharing these pledges with our Brothers and Sisters around the world... working toward mutually supporting their public affirmation... affirmation of these commitments... pledges.

One pledge is to name for ourselves and others the hidden coercions all around us... on which our lives are premised... and examine their repercussions... It is force that took our voices... It is speaking out against force that returns them...

...but to be replaced with what?”... is the inevitable next question – of those who have not been reading Kropotkin – and one thing I've learned... is the significance of first steps... which... in a system that has a lock on our thought-process... happen with questions – to be followed by others – and being willing to go where they lead.

[Note to follow up on later: we said in an earlier show that the coerced-work system globally is disintegrating... which it is... which has multiple repercussions and consequences: if we are not prepared to address the numbers of folk who are desperate – a lot of whom in my neighborhood have been given the 'job' of hounding and tracking and being that unofficial Gestapo – those are the uses to which our Brothers and Sisters will be put before they've had an opportunity to even begin to think about “how have they been suppressed by the 'class'-system?” So I want to put it out there that there are challenges for us in jobs – developing our thought-process... asking and following our questions – and there are challenges for us outside of jobs...]

[“160124defendingtheself_6.mp3”:]

Recently... 'martial-artist-Kate' said that the youth-empowerment organization that she founded – but which she is no longer directly involved with – is engaged in a discussion about its original 'self-defense' mission. Some among the current leadership think such an emphasis could be “re-stimulating of traumatic events...” and want to focus solely on hip-hop... dance... and performance...

But with Alice's lens the questions broaden and deepen – probing the notion of 'the self'... a 'self' attempting to exist in a 'system' that suppresses it [I almost said 'despises it'... it is that feeling of anger I've been realizing that is behind that suppression: anger at authenticity when one has been denied it...] and so the myriad threats it is confronted with... – and following those questions takes us right to the heart of the system: to obedience... and to coercion... Where do we begin to address 'self-defense' in a 'system' (of 'class'...) that denies the right of the authentic 'self' to exist?... a 'system' whose essence is coercion... and whose 'nature' is totalitarian – as it is impressed across all social institutions... and is global... Most likely if we tried to bring Alice into our work with children... geared toward helping children identify... navigate... and openly confront... honestly... not just threats to their physical existence (in the broadest sense of those words... i.e....including in an 'economic' sense...) but as well threats to their intellectual and emotional development... the money would dry up... agent-

action would escalate... meetings and facilitated planning sessions would follow... along with smooth and orchestrated guidance from multiple (especially funder) sources... to the effect that “organizations should focus on what they do best... where they have a track record... and good relationships with funding institutions.”

The 'evolution' to our global future that's free will not be funded by philanthropy – just the opposite. It will come from focused... concerted meetings... discussions... and actions – globally – and from endorsing and sharing anti-coercion knowledge and practices... with ourselves and with our children.

[“160124platoslonghaunt_7.mp3”:]

For a lot of us it is too fantastical... almost too silly – if they have not read Karl Popper... Miklos Nyiszli... John Boswell... Alice Miller and Martin Bernal – to believe that the lives of almost all the people of the planet have been structured and limited by the musings of a frustrated... two-millennia-long-dead would-be 'philosopher-king'... It is an horrific notion... and yet it is so...

...our lives have been structured and limited by a handful of guys... since the French Revolution... who developed a scheme for aggregating all of the 'money' – read: 'resources of the planet' – in order to implement the *Republic*... They *literally* used the *Republic* as guide... along with Bentham... and the child-rearing pedagogues... for locking rigid hierarchy in place. Look around you today and note his precepts arrayed... in particular: “no one should ever be without a leader...” – isn't that what a coerced-work system means? We have had no opportunity... most of us... to develop our inherent leadership... and 'power' intends that to never change – and they have the answer to folks who try... when we stand to the side... and so can see the hidden hand on the levers.

When we consider it... EMF-weapons were the 'perfect' 'solution' to such folk... – dissenters – from 'power's perspective: 'surgical' and 'humane'... simply apply a bit of 'punishment' when people 'disobey'... and we are effectively checked in our ability to dissent. These weapons have put a lock on our ability to develop – both as global humans and as a global society. There are no independent actors anymore if we don't check this threat... – everyone would indeed have a leader... and it's name would be EMF.

And while we must begin here in the U.S. by using *our* lever of our right to pursue happiness...

...ultimately... we can only 'break out of the Panopticon' *globally* – by working together across nation to build alliances for challenging the management-right of states...

[“160124addressinganger_8.mp3”:]

“Reflections of '3.7': the November 1, 2015 Show”:

If those who harm us... are functionaries of... those who say they are 'self'-less... fragments of an 'idea' that lives in them... an 'idea' of 'Perfection'... if those who harm us... say they are but following orders... to whom do we address... our anger?... is it 'fair' to say... that our anger has no object... once we see... the original catastrophe of making children into objects?... or is that not enough?... and then... does 'seeing clearly'... possessing the 'right story'... mean... new feelings superintend those that were suppressed?... or can our fury at the theft... of our authentic-ness... be directed at 'a system'... or must it be... at 'the system' in them... our parents...

[And this is where we are going to be advancing the gift of Alice... because I'm a perfect example of this phenomenon in which those ultimately *responsible* for hurting me are far-removed... while their functionaries who do the hurting are either their duped 'children'... or paid... who may or may not harbor ill-feelings toward me... but whose behavior is intended to provoke – and Alice tells us that problems arise not from having feelings but from suppressing them... but how sensible is it to express anger at anonymous... most-likely-children at computer stations helping to hurt people while pretending they're playing a computer game? – And... I've been wondering who decides who uses 'the weapon'? Is it a perk?... Perhaps the guys who wield 'the weapon' get as a perk permission to kill whoever they want. That's the world we got. I know you can't know that... I do... and I won't say 'unfortunately' because we have to know what is going on... as Shakespeare said... we have to

know the difficulty to develop our solution to it... and this is not a difficulty that we're going to learn about on *Democracy Now*... *Democracy Now* is not going to organize our response to the secret killing of folk for decades and decades by the shadow-state... I am more and more convinced that politics is not just 'theater' – I think most of the folk who participate in it know that it's theater... but they don't know that there's a 'High-Tech Auschwitz' project going on... it's just these ten thousand guys... So... who decides?... is it a 'committee of folk?... or do they elect every so often the 'Wielder of the Weapon'? We got some seriously sick puppies *running* the entire ship called 'Planet Earth' – we don't need to make that our focus... but we do need to make our focus “helping each other *believe* in our right to be free”... because until we want it... it's going to be real hard to fight for it.

[“160124learningfromnewborns_9.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

[At the end of last week's show she was telling us that the first key element of supporting our children is to respect them... – Meanwhile... how do we do that when we indoctrinate them into a system of 'class'? This is getting to my point about the need to advance the gift of Alice... because 'class' itself is inherently abusive... and yet because it presents itself as 'progress' it remains largely hidden to us... even Alice – and saying this is not to minimize Alice: just to be able to see the inherent integrity of that new being is a huge advance under 'class'... and to be humble enough to recognize that we have to learn from these babies... they are so whole and healthy and in touch with the true knowledge of life... of what it means to be alive... and healthy... and part of the vast infinite... – P.S.]

There is evidence among the younger generation that this kind of willingness is possible even for people who were themselves victims of child-rearing.

But liberation from centuries of constraint can scarcely be expected to take place in a single generation [although... with the benefit of an accurate analysis (“all difficulties are but easy... when they are known...”) and with the benefit of the Internet... and instantaneous communication... this is no longer the case... We are ready to move on... It is so past time... – P.S.]. The idea that we as parents can learn more about the laws of life from a newborn child than we can from our parents will strike many older people as absurd and ridiculous. Younger people may also be suspicious of this idea, because many of them have been made insecure by a mixture of psychological literature and internalized “poisonous pedagogy.” A very intelligent and sensitive father, for example, asked me if I didn't think it was taking advantage of children to try to learn from them. This question, coming from someone born in 1942 who had been able to rise above the taboos of his generation to an extraordinary degree, showed me that we must be mindful of the misunderstanding and new insecurity that can result from reading books on psychology.

Can an honest attempt to learn be considered an abuse? If we are not open to what the other person is telling us, genuine rapport is hardly possible. We need to hear what the child has to say in order to give our understanding, support, and love. The child, on the other hand, needs free space if he or she is to find adequate self-expression. There is no discrepancy here between means and ends, but rather a dialectical process involving dialogue. Learning is a result of listening, which in turn leads to even better listening and attentiveness to the other person. In other words, to learn from the child, we must have empathy, and empathy grows as we learn. It is a different matter for parents or educators who would like the child to be a certain way or think they must expect him to be that way. To reach their sacred ends, they try to mold the child in their image, suppressing self-expression in the child and at the same time missing out on an opportunity to learn something. Certainly, abuse of this sort is often unintentional; it is not only directed against children but – if we look more closely – pervades most human relationships, because the partners frequently were abused children and are now showing unconsciously what happened to them in childhood.

Antipedagogical writings (by Braunmuhl and others) can be of great help to young parents as long as they do not interpret them as instructions on “how to be a parent” but use them to expand their knowledge; they can then find encouragement to abandon their prejudices and look at things in a new way.

[This concludes the section “Is There a Harmless Pedagogy?”... – P.S.]

["160124hiddencruelty_10.mp3":]

[What follows is the 'Introduction' to the part of *For Your Own Good* that is titled: "The Last Act of the Silent Drama: The World Reacts with Horror"... within which is the chapter "The War of Annihilation against the Self"... which is introduced by a brief section she calls 'The Lost Opportunity of Puberty'... which we'll also be reading... after which... we'll be skipping to the end of the book... to read her concluding thoughts... – P.S.]

'Introduction' to "*The Last Act of the Silent Drama: The World Reacts with Horror*"

It is difficult to write about child abuse without taking on a moralizing tone. It is so natural to feel outrage at the adult who beats a child and pity for the helpless child that, even with a great deal of understanding of human nature, one is tempted to condemn the adult for being cruel and brutal. But where will you find human beings who are only good or only cruel? [...the question presumes 'class'... makes no sense outside of it... – P.S.] The reason why parents mistreat their children has less to do with character and temperament than with the fact that they were mistreated themselves and were not permitted to defend themselves. There are countless people like A.'s father who are kind, gentle, and highly sensitive and yet inflict cruelty on their children every day, calling it child-rearing. As long as child beating was considered necessary and useful, they could justify this form of cruelty. Today such people suffer when their "hand slips," when an incomprehensible compulsion or despair induces them to shout at, humiliate, or beat their children and see their tears, yet they cannot help themselves and will do the same thing again next time. This will inevitably continue to happen as long as they persist in idealizing their own childhood.

Paul Klee is renowned as a great painter of magical and poetic canvases. His only child may have been the one person who was familiar with his other side. Felix Klee, the painter's son, told an interviewer (Bruckenbauer; February 29, 1980): "He had two sides; he was full of fun, but he was also capable of playing his part in my upbringing by giving me an energetic whipping." Paul Klee made wonderful puppets, presumably for his son, of which thirty are still preserved. His son relates: "Papa constructed the stage in a doorway of our small apartment. He admitted that when I was in school he sometimes put on a performance for the cat..." Yet the father performed not only for the cat but for his son as well. In view of this, could Felix hold against his father the beatings he was given?

["160124storedanger_11.mp3":]

I have used this example to help readers free themselves from clichés about good or bad parents. Cruelty can take a thousand forms, and it goes undetected even today, because the damage it does to the child and the ensuing consequences are still so little known. This section of the book is devoted to these consequences.

The individual psychological states in the lives of most people [under 'class'... – P.S.] are:

One. To be hurt as a small child without anyone recognizing the situation as such

Two. To fail to react to the resulting suffering with anger

Three. To show gratitude for what are supposed to be good intentions

Four. To forget everything

Five. To discharge the stored-up anger onto others in adulthood or to direct it against oneself

The greatest cruelty that can be inflicted on children is to refuse to let them express their anger and suffering except at the risk of losing their parents' love and affection. The anger stemming from early childhood is stored up in the unconscious, and since it basically represents a healthy, vital source of energy, an equal amount of energy must be expended in order to repress it. An upbringing that succeeds in sparing the parents at the expense of the child's vitality sometimes leads to suicide or extreme drug addiction, which is a form of suicide. If drugs succeed in covering up the emptiness caused by repressed feelings and self-alienation, then the process of withdrawal brings this void back into view. When withdrawal is not accompanied by restoration of vitality, then the cure is sure to be temporary. Christiane F., subject of an international bestseller and film, paints a devastatingly vivid picture of a tragedy of this nature.

["160124selfdiscovery_12.mp3":]

"The War of Annihilation against the Self"

'The Lost Opportunity of Puberty'

Parents often have such success with the numerous methods they use to subdue their children that they don't encounter any problems until the children reach puberty. The "cooling off" of feelings and drives during the latency period abets parents in their desire to have model children. In the book *The Golden Cage* by Hilda Bruch, parents of anorexic daughters describe how gifted, well-mannered, successful, well-adjusted, and considerate these children had been. The parents cannot understand the sudden change; they are left helpless and uncomprehending by an adolescent who seems to be rejecting all norms and whose self-destructive behavior cannot be modified by logical arguments or by the subtle devices of "poisonous pedagogy."

At puberty, adolescents are often taken totally by surprise by the intensity of their true feelings, after having succeeded in keeping them at a distance during the latency period. With the spurt of biological growth, these feelings (rage, anger, rebelliousness, falling in love, sexual desire, enthusiasm, joy, enchantment, sadness) seek full expression, but in many cases this would endanger the parents' psychic balance. If adolescents were to show their true feelings openly, they would run the risk of being sent to prison as dangerous terrorists or put in mental institutions as insane. Our society would no doubt have nothing but a psychiatric clinic to offer Shakespeare's Hamlet or Goethe's Werther, and Schiller's Karl Moor would probably face the same fate. This is why drug addicts attempt to adapt to society by struggling against their authentic feelings, but since they cannot live entirely without them in the storm of puberty, they try to regain access to them with the help of drugs, which seem to do the trick, at least in the beginning. But society's views, which are represented by the parents, and which the adolescent has long ago internalized, must prevail: the consequences of having strong, intense feelings are rejection, isolation, ostracism, and threat of death, i.e., self-destruction.

The drug addict punishes himself for seeking his true self – certainly a justifiable and essential goal – by destroying his own spontaneous feelings, repeating the punishment that was inflicted on him in early childhood when he showed the first signs of vitality. Almost every heroin addict describes having initially experienced feelings of hitherto unknown intensity, with the result that he becomes even more conscious of the vapidity and emptiness of his usual emotional life. [Isn't the clarity and simplicity of the truth exhilarating?... – P.S.]

He simply can't imagine that this experience is possible without heroin, and he understandably begins to long for it to be repeated. For, in these out-of-the-ordinary moments, the young person discovers how he might have been [George Eliot wrote... and Alice concurs – and illustrates repeatedly in her essential and transformative work – that "it is never too late to be the person one should have been..." – P.S.]; he has made contact with his self, and as might be expected, once this has happened, he can find no rest. He can no longer act as though his true self had never existed. Now he knows that it does exist, but he also knows that ever since early childhood this true self has not had a chance. And so he strikes a compromise with his fate: he will encounter his self from time to time without anyone finding out. Not even he will realize what is involved here, for it is the "stuff" that produces the experience; the effect comes "from outside" and is difficult to bring about. It will never become an integrated part of his self, and he will never have to or be able to assume responsibility for these feelings. The intervals between one fix and the next – characterized by total apathy, lethargy, emptiness, or uneasiness and anxiety – bear this out: the fix is over like a dream that one can't remember and that can have no effect on one's life as a whole. [But when we are denied our true selves it is our entire life that is like a dream... and that is in fact the intention of those who have set it up: this global reenactment – on a vast and massive scale – of their own suppressed traumas... – P.S.]

[The January 24, 2016 show ends here.]

["160131forceproducesrage_1.mp3":]

The January 31, 2016 show – themes and things: Continues themes we've been developing: "What does it mean to integrate our experience of the abusiveness of 'class' into our personalities?..." and... "particularly given the disintegration of the global-coerced-work-system... and 'power's inevitable hidden machinations in response... what would a wholistic 'Self-defense education look like that would address our (we-the-people's) lack of autonomy and our vulnerability to 'power's

attempts to divide us?...” and... “can this be done while forming ourselves into 'a people' demanding the right to pursue happiness?... both as 'a people'... and as fully developing individualities...” and... “how can we implement our anti-coercion commitments to our children in the school system?...” and... “how do we begin to develop our 'global-focus-of-the-alternative' commitment?...” and: “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 12... pages 78 – 84)

January 26, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: What a conundrum we are faced with (at least from the view in our separate rooms...): child-rearing (under 'class'...) is totalitarian... a reflection of the global 'class' system... which means its 'class-violence and abusiveness' – i.e.... its coercion – we don't consciously experience as such... which means many of us... as Marcuse said... never become aware of our chains (the 'class-system'-locks on our thought...) are not aware that force runs against our inherent nature and so produces rage (remember the Siberian tiger at the San Francisco Zoo – Tatiana? – of course Townsend said... “Hunger will tame the fiercest animals...” – but only if you've conquered their minds first...) force produces rage in us – which 'power' then rushes in to tell us *is* part of 'our' nature... as well as to license it – that rage – for its purposes: which are all at base about defeating our solidarity...

(Alice is inspiring us to explore this con for a moment... because it feels so key to their ability to maintain their control: the fact that we don't see this dynamic [and of course the fact that we never see their hidden hand...]. 'Power' ensures that our lives are riddled with coercions... coercions of every kind... and so ensures that we-subjected-to-them are riddled with rage. Alice has shown us that until we see our rage with consciousness... we will seek substitute 'objects' on whom to release our rage – and of course... given 'power's media-control [and our atomization...] it can manipulate us by this means *ad infinitum*... The result being... that we perpetuate 'the system' multiply: by feeding 'power's constructed divisions... by keeping us demoralized... by providing 'evidence' for 'power's con that we are 'inherently violent' [and this is a key con for duping its own 'children'...] and so need 'management'... and it ensures that we never develop our thought and see through 'power's cons (which we need to do to achieve our freedom...) – because we need each other to develop our thought. When we pause and consider it – the writhing... convolutedly-twisted knots of cons – from an energy perspective... we get a fresh glimpse of 'the system's ugliness [and lack of viability...] when we see that the vast majority of all of the planet's human energy is devoted to preserving in their elevated illusions the egos of the Tiny-Ten-Thousand – that is not just energy-wastage... that is energy-destruction on a massive scale – an observation which feels defining of their intent... vis-a-vis us... and I think merits further consideration...)

...the entire 'system' is *about* 'defeating our – we-the-people's – solidarity' – there's energy wastage (and destruction...) for you –

(...it's important that we give to our insight that 'power's key requirement-to-exist is destroying our mutual concern [empathy...] its full weight... consider what it means that 'power' seeks to find it to annihilate it... It is imperative that we take away the ability of the most emotionally-stunted... the most damaged... to shape the world in their image...)

...and as long as we don't create for ourselves gathering spaces in which we can do as Alice says and begin to consciously *experience* the abusiveness of 'class'...

(...an example of this could be sharing our earliest feelings about the concept of 'work': whether 'grief' at a parent leaving every morning... or 'anger' at being rushed – at one's body being forced to adopt a 'schedule – 'stress' due to a parent putting performance-pressure on you – to “bring out your 'best'...” or “strengthen your hand in the economic competition...” – or 'sadness' at seeing a parent given over to tiredness... to duties determined by large unknown forces... to treading a road not his own...)

...absent our gathering spaces in which we can consciously *experience* the abusiveness of 'class'... so that we can 'integrate that experience of abuse into our personalities'... we will continue to act and react according to the totalitarian conditioning we receive in child-rearing... and across 'class'-'society.' (With the invention of the inter- [nation-] state system'... and the invention of childrearing... 'class' became totalitarian: i.e.... “no alternative... nowhere to go...” is what we're told... as long as we accept its premises: that the earth is 'spoils' to be 'won' by force... wiles... and endless manipulation by the most ruthless alive...)

But what does it mean to 'integrate the experience of 'class'-abuse into our personalities'... what would that look like? Would it begin by noticing what had been taken – the theft of our 'authentic-ness'... our vividness... our spontaneity? – and newly appreciating their return... our renewed sense of expansiveness? Largely... I suspect... it would look like starting to really love

ourselves... not through the barren route of daily affirmations... but through walking the newly vivid... fertile path of our understanding... blossoming...

["160131thelovedeniedus_2.mp3":]

"The child..." Alice tells us... "finds it impossible to understand why his parents are hurting him..." and that most of us get stuck in the 'trying-to-understand'... whereas... "sorrow [could] reactivate numbed feelings..." – particularly as... this sorrow... when it springs from finally seeing what is really happening in the surrounding manufactured reality... from finally seeing its manifold falseness... that sorrow encompasses all of us:

[The child] who adapts to parental demands always tries to understand this absurdity and will accept it as a matter of course. But he has to pay for this pseudo-understanding with his feelings and his sensitivity to his own needs, i.e., with his authentic self. This is why access to the normal, angry, uncomprehending, and rebellious child he once was had previously been blocked off. When this child within the adult is liberated, he will discover his vital roots and strength.

To be free to express resentment dating back to early childhood does not mean that one now becomes a resentful person, but rather the exact opposite. For the very reason that one is permitted to experience these feelings that were directed against the parents, one does not have to use surrogate figures for purposes of abreaction. Only hatred felt for surrogates is endless and insatiable – as we saw in the case of Adolf Hitler – because on a conscious level the feeling is separated from the person against whom it was originally directed.

For these reasons I believe that the free expression of resentment against one's parents represents a great opportunity. It provides access to one's true self, reactivates numbed feelings, opens the way for mourning and – with luck – reconciliation. In any case it is an essential part of the process of psychic healing.

Just as Alice says... we (as a people...) have been trying to solve the puzzle of our parents' misery for them (for millennia...) trying 'to win' – and in the process becoming them... reproducing 'the system'...

...and this is where I think we advance Alice: at this moment when we remember our earliest feelings of rage... when we re-experience our early rage at being forced – and then... as we develop our understanding... with the help of our Brothers and Sisters... to see that that force can *entirely* be laid at the feet of the coerced-work system... is *entirely* due to the coerced-work system... This is what Alice didn't focus enough on... and perhaps didn't recognize...

She argues that it is only by getting on our own side – as the child who was hurt because of this force applied to our sensitive selves... – that we can get 'unstuck'... release the grief that unfreezes frozen feelings – and this is so true... all of us know – those of us trapped in this coerced-work-system – that feeling of being 'stuck'... of having our feelings frozen... as we... on 'automatic'... keep doing what we think... what we thought... our parents needed us to do... and that if we kept doing it... somehow... the solution would come... we would find the right 'formula' that would solve the dilemma... that would make them happy... and so we kept doing what we thought we were *supposed* to do... – that's our feelings being frozen... our spontaneity being buried: "doing what we're supposed to do..." – *all of that is entirely* due to the coerced-work-system... all of it...

...but... reunion with our suppressed feelings... our original vitality... if illumined with truth – the right story... that violence is not our nature... but rather *caused* in us by a 'system' *not made for us*... but made for a tiny... tiny... few to pretend they are 'gods'... or 'philosopher-kings'... – I mean this is truly the insanity our lives have been made into... because we have been denied access to each other... access to the airwaves... access to media... access to public discourse... so that we can begin to see this: the full extent of 'power's manipulateness... duplicity... and misanthropy... toward us... – all of it has been a set-up for the past two and a half centuries... a conscious intentional... plan. And it is *that* understanding... *that* illumined-truth... that allows us to get un-stuck... that allows us to begin to have access to that original... spontaneous... vital... self... that we are... but we buried... thinking we had to... to please our parents... that we had to... to be 'good'... to be 'good people'... to win praise... to finally get the love that was denied us...

...the love that was denied us... – when we get to *that*... suppressed feeling... and find the grief beginning to be allowed to speak... finally... that grief that's released... ultimately... once we begin to see with the right story... with the truth... that grief literally does encompass all of us... all of us trapped in this insanity... all of us – we want *all of us* to get free... And it

releases then our empathy... our caring... our concern... for each other... It inspires that determination that we're going to hear about with the Zapatistas... that 'unwillingness to bend'... because we refuse to settle for anything less... than truth... honesty... our full selves... our spontaneity... our vitality – and not just for us... but for all of us trapped in this sick system.

...reunion with our suppressed feelings... our original vitality... can be... if illumined with truth – in the right story – is also reunion with the infinite... with our expansiveness... and this will not be relinquished... for any price...

...and then... the grief released... is grief for all of us... all of us trapped in... 'the system'...

“151129teachsmightmakesright_6.mp3”: “...the process of developing empathy *is* the process of freeing ourselves from 'the state'...” [From the November 29, 2015 *Waking Up Radio* show.] ...and that:

[“160131zapatistadefense_3.mp3”:]

In our October 4, 2015 show we got an update – from the Fall, 2015 *Slingshot* (Wolverine de Cleyre, “Alive and Well: A Visit to Zapatista Territory”) – on a group of folk who have done that hard work of consciously experiencing 'class'-abuse... and the result is revealing:

Zapatistas see the real work, the important thing, as growing their own food, raising their children, living together. They are willing to engage in armed struggle to defend this autonomy from a government they feel has no legitimacy, but that's not what they want to devote their energy toward.... Their autonomy is due both to their own unbending will, and international pressure that keeps the Mexican military from slaughtering them wholesale.

...the result: autonomy... 'selves'... wills that do not bend... i.e. something to defend. It is this that we want in ourselves and in our Brothers and Sisters.

But while the Zapatistas prepare for armed conflict... 'power' takes its assault 'economic' – which it *prefers* over witnessed-battery (unless it serves other 'power'-purposes: e.g. fostering divisions... eliminating the indigenous... or preserving the global hierarchy...) for it far-better 'disarms' us (any hidden-hand that harms us... whether extra-legal... or extra-economic... receives 'power's preference... if it's convinced we'll remain ignorant of it...) and leaves our anger no true culprit to answer to it (of course the overt violence of orbital... sphere... or cautionary... states is their own business... or so the story goes...):

California's cap-and-trade program is the first of its kind in the nation. And the state's [under the guidance of Governor Jerry Brown who... let's not forget... columnist David Brooks was pushing almost two years ago as his Democratic Party presidential candidate-pick... although it's not a stretch to imagine him as a Republican (see our May 25, 2014 *Waking Up Radio* show...)] And the state's leaders are pushing to become the only jurisdiction in the world that also offsets its climate pollution through investments in tropical forest regions in the Southern regions. The common name for such efforts is REDD. Several industrialized countries, as well as the World Bank and the United Nations, have already invested money in REDD pilot projects...

But critics warn that California's adoption of REDD would have far-reaching human rights and environmental consequences. Initial investments by the World Bank and the United Nations in REDD have already precipitated violent evictions of indigenous people from their forested homelands in the Democratic Republic of the Congo and Kenya – to make way for carbon-saving projects. In fact, countless activists and grassroots organizations regard REDD as a recipe for a global land grab, prompting them to dub it a case of “CO2lonialism.”

Given California's trailblazing status with regard to climate policy, its adoption of REDD would likely trigger similar policies throughout the globe... “It's been a huge success,” said Laurie Wayburn, president of the Pacific Forest Trust, which has been instrumental in developing California's program. “This has gone from a what-are-you-smoking kind of reception to every single forest owner who manages [read: 'develops'... read: 'exploits for profit and destroys its health...'] their land looking at the protocols as part of a business approach.”...

...The Chiapas region, which was the location of the well-known 1994 Zapatista rebellion, is also a hotbed of opposition to REDD.... (“Cap and Clear-Cut,” Will Parrish, *East Bay Express*, January 20 – 26, 2016)

But while international pressure shields the Zapatistas from slaughter... until we consciously experience the abusiveness of the global-'class'-system... how can we ultimately protect out Sister and Brother Zapatistas?

[“160131createdthestoryclass_4.mp3”:]

Possessing 'the right story'... we have been arguing... is key to our 'healing'... to the full restoration... of both the 'self' we were born with... and our common earth-endowment...

...and 'the right story' to understand... to regain our authentic-ness... and repossess what was stolen... is the story of 'class': i.e.... the objective of 'power' has ever been: “keep the cattle herded... until we don't need them...”

Let's recall yet again one of our key lessons (also discussed in our March 9, 2014 *Waking Up Radio* show...) from our reading of *Savage Continent* by Keith Lowe: “...‘war’ is always war on us... whether they spill our guts with guns... or markets...” (From our commentary on the chapter in *Antisystemic Movements: “Rethinking the Concepts of Class and Status-Group in a World Systems Perspective”*)...

...that comment was in response to this quote from Marx and Engels: “[The developing bourgeoisie] compels all nations, on pain of extinction, to adopt the bourgeois modes of production; it compels them to introduce what it calls civilization into their midst, i.e., to become bourgeoisie themselves. In one word, it creates a world after its own image.” But what we've learned... is that the disaster that was developing was not a force called 'capitalism'... but the megalomaniacal conscious self-organization and aggrandizement... of Plato's Tribesmen.

Here's more from that commentary:

...could it be that Marx... who wrote so forcefully about taking the world away from 'philosophy' and setting it on its feet again... was likewise viewing things falsely?... Adam Smith's words – their full import – have never been taken to heart: we commoners have been “little heard and less regarded....” The whole *point* of 'class'... is to establish (irrevocably... soon... they hope...) that we '*don't matter*'... so why would any of its 'thinkers' – whose allegiance is to 'Thought'... or so they might imagine – consider it worthwhile to try to see the world from the eyes of those who 'can't put two sentences together'?... who are 'mere matter'... to the mind of 'Thought'... to be used to advance... a 'bigger' agenda that they could 'never understand'.

All to say... consider this... that 'war' is not to reinvigorate dead markets... but to suppress our uprisings against injustice – ...when the people arise... 'economy'... 'efficiency'... and all that jazz... flies out the door... and in walks war. 'Economy' is just a tool... like any other technology. So 'war' is always war on us... whether they spill our guts with guns... or markets. (It's all the same to them.) The economy is just war by other means... and war is the profligate failure of 'breeding'... to control the energy of the majority (the true point of the 'education' we're all given.) What they (the 'power'-guys...) hate most... is resistance. What they love most... is obedience... [until they don't...]

[“160131powersanswertous_5.mp3”:]

Sisters and Brothers... I said this recently – and sang it in fact – to a few paid functionaries at the park one early morning this week... I lost the melody but it went something like this: “There is a list... of EMF-targets for their weapons... and never doubt you are on it... for they want no loose ends... it may come as cancer... it may come as heart attack... it may come as Alzheimer's... it may come as stroke...” – I named a few more... but I forgot one... an obvious one actually...

...There is a man with whom I'm acquainted... who on occasion I speak to... and this on a regular basis... A few months back when I called his office I was told he was dead... of pneumonia... “But he's a young man...” I said... forty... if that... He'd been dead for days before found. I wondered about it – as in my life now there are no more coincidences – and now... now that I'm experiencing the effects of this 'latest' 'wave'-weapon... which generates such thick mucus... that it almost seems

to solidify in your head and chest (and steals your breath...) particularly in the first few days of it... when the dense mucus it produces was most prodigious... in the first 'stage' of its effects... I experienced a moment of such powerful lethargy that even though I know they have 'wave'-weapons that induce sleep... I got pulled under... and that mucus started building up in my head and chest – and all I wanted to do though was sleep... but a voice in my head said... “Oh no you don't...” so I didn't... but that was also because I knew the cause was EMF-weapons...

Sisters and Brothers... this is a particularly nasty assault... the mucus settles in the throat and chest (and steals your breath...) and requires constant attention to get rid of it – which you can't... at least not while they keep hitting you... I imagine it kills early and fast... and particularly those with few means – it's occurred to me that the Auschwitz metaphor is more exact than apt... when disaster strikes of any kind... who survives?... who can afford the drugs and the treatment? So what does it 'accomplish'?... elimination of the 'unfit'... and transfers of wealth from those left...

Though we know 'power' has always favored such schemes... few will believe this – 'High-Tech Auschwitz – is their answer to accelerating income-inequality... But keep garlic on hand... Trust what your body says...

[“160131compulsiontodestroy_6.mp3”:]

(My head is still in that last comment... I want to say this thick mucus does settle in the throat and chest... and I was concerned... particularly with them literally giving me the message... “shut up!” – e.g. putting license plates in front of me with letters that read “ssh...” – because we don't know what these frequencies... in interaction with our bodies' defense mechanisms... will do... or whether another element – I felt like I was poisoned... the taste in my mouth I still have – whatever they're plowing the skies with?... 'aluminum sulfates'?... 'self-levitating aerosols'? – I recall linking to an article on my page *Palmers' Chat* on “Solar Radiation Management”... I have to say ... I am wondering... now that I know that nothing appears in the media that's not vetted... whether that's 'plausible deniability' for an 'Auschwitz' scheme... truly... this is the world we got... Now I am not trying to suggest that we try to investigate... rather... that we trust our process of reclamation of ourselves... our power... it is powerful people that demand a *world* that's free... But I am concerned that rather than hearing this... folks are told that because of climate disruption – the threat to the planet – we should focus on our own backyards... even though we know that a One-Day-Global-General-Strike – if we could get that message around the world... and do it for one day... this whole game of 'power's would be over... and the earth could begin to heal...)

“Reflections of '3.7': the November 8, 2015 Show”:

(This 'reflection' comes from observing their ['power's] obsession with using what we love against us... and Alice explains why this is: they have a compulsion to re-live their early experience of abuse... and what they most loved – their parents – was used against them... and they repeat this compulsion endlessly... until we stop them from doing it... simply by our getting 'big'... by re-claiming our lives... and the earth...)

'They' like to imagine they're killing us with ourselves... with that which we love... with that which they have not... with that about which we are passionate: our children... the 'infinite'...

...to 'prove' that love is a weakness... and that they are 'better'... 'stronger'... in being hard (this is Fascism...)

...and... they reason... if hard is better... only they can be 'the best'...

...and only 'the best' deserve to rule (this is Plato...)

[“160131rescuingtheparent_7.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

Becoming dependent on an absurd [i.e... 'irrational'... – P.S.] compulsion is likewise comprehensible in terms of the addict's previous history: since dependence has typified his entire previous life, he is hardly aware of it as such. A twenty-four-year-old woman who has been addicted to heroin since age sixteen appears on TV and explains that she supports her habit by means of

prostitution and has to take drugs to be able “to put up with those animals.” She makes a very sincere impression, and we can appreciate and sympathize with everything she says. Only the matter-of-factness with which she regards this vicious circle as the only possible way of life for her puzzles us. This woman obviously cannot imagine a different life, free of her addiction, because she has never known anything like a free decision. The only life she has ever known has been one dominated by a destructive compulsion, and this is why she is unable to grasp the absurdity of such a path. It will not surprise us to learn that she continues to idealize both parents, as is frequently the case with drug addicts. She feels guilty for being so weak, for disappointing and disgracing her parents. She also says “society” is to blame – which of course cannot be denied. But the real predicament, the conflict between her search for her true self and the necessity of adapting to the needs of her parents, cannot be recognized as long as she continues to protect her parents from self-reproach. The concrete example of Christiane F.'s life story can help us to understand this predicament.

[This concludes the 'Introduction' to Christiane's story... what follows is an excerpt from the chapter itself. Afterwards... we'll leap ahead to a few of her “Concluding Comments” in *For Your Own Good*... which include important insights for our current process... particularly when considered in conjunction with Proudhon's likewise incisive analysis... – P.S.]

“The Search for the Self and Self-Destruction through Drugs: the Life of Christiane F.”

...Christiane, who is beaten often by her father for reasons she does not understand, finally begins to act in ways that give her father “good reason to beat her.” By so doing she improves his character by making an unjust and unpredictable father into one who at least punishes justly. This is the only way she has to rescue the image of a father she loves and idealizes. She also begins to provoke other men and turn them into punitive fathers – first the building superintendent, then her teachers, and finally, during her drug addiction, the police. In this way she can shift the conflict with her father onto other people. Because Christiane cannot talk with her father about their conflicts or settle them with him, she relegates her fundamental hatred for him to her unconscious, directing her hostility against surrogate male authority figures. Eventually, all the child's bottled up rage at being humiliated, deprived of respect, misunderstood, and left alone is turned against herself in the form of addiction. As time goes by, Christiane does to herself what her father had done to her earlier: she systematically destroys her self-respect, manipulates her feelings with the use of drugs, condemns herself to speechlessness (this highly articulate child!) and isolation, and in the end ruins body as well as soul.

[“160131preventingtorturers_8.mp3”:]

When I read Christiane's account of her childhood I sometimes was reminded of descriptions of life in a concentration camp. The following things are two examples:

At first we did it to harass other children: we'd grab a child, shut him in an elevator, and push all the buttons. We held on to the second elevator so the first one had to jiggle its way up to the top, stopping at every floor. They often did the same thing to me, especially when I was coming back with the dog and had to get home for supper on time. Then they pushed all the buttons so it took forever to get to the 12th floor, and Ajax got terribly nervous.

It was mean to push all the buttons when someone was in a big hurry. He would end up peeing in the elevator. But it was even meaner to take a child's wooden spoon away from him. All the little children always took a long wooden soup ladle out with them, because that was the only way we could reach the elevator buttons. Without the ladle, you were completely helpless. If you lost it or the other children took it away from you, you had to walk up the 11 flights of stairs. Of course, none of the other children ever helped you out, and the grownups thought you just wanted to play in the elevator and make it break down.

One time, one of my pet mice ran into the grass, which we weren't allowed to walk on. We couldn't find it again. I was a little sad, but I was comforted by the thought that a mouse would like it much better outside than in the cage.

My father picked that evening to come into my room to look into the mouse cage. He asked in a funny voice, “how come there are only two? Where is the third one?” I didn't even notice there was anything wrong when he asked in such a funny way. My father never did like the mice and he kept telling me I should give them away. I told him the mouse ran away outside on the playground.

My father looked at me as though he had gone crazy. Then I knew he was going to go on one of his wild rampages. He shouted and started writing and hitting me. He kept on hitting me, and I was trapped on my bed and couldn't get away. He had never hit me like that before, and I thought he was going to kill me. Then, when he started letting my sister have it too, I had a few seconds to get free and I instinctively tried to get to the window. [My father stopped me.]

[My mother put herself between us...] All of a sudden I was more afraid for her been for myself. I went over to them. She tried to escape into the bathroom and bolt the door. But my father was holding her by the hair. As usual, there was wash soaking in the bath tub, because so far we hadn't been able to afford a washing machine. My father stuck my mother's head into the tub full of water. Somehow or other, she managed to get loose. I don't know whether he let her go or whether she got herself free.

My father disappeared into the living room. He was white as a sheet. My mother went and got her coat. She left the apartment without saying a word.

That was without a doubt one of the most awful moments of my life when my mother simply walked out of the apartment without a word and left us alone. My first thought was, Now he's going to come back and start hitting me again. But everything was quiet in the living room except for the television, which was on.

No one seriously doubts that the inmates of a concentration camp underwent terrible suffering. But when we hear about the physical abuse of children, we react with astonishing equanimity. Depending on our ideology, we say, "that's quite normal" or "children have to be disciplined, after all," or "that was the custom in those days," or "someone who won't listen has to be made to feel it," etc. An elderly gentleman I once met at a party told me with amusement that when he was a little boy his mother has swung him back and forth over a fire she had lighted specially for the purpose of drying his pants and breaking him of the habit of wetting."My mother was the most wonderful person you've ever want to meet, but that's the way things were done in our family in those days," he said. Such lack of empathy for the suffering of one's own childhood can result in an astonishing lack of sensitivity to other children's suffering. When what was done to me was done for my own good, then I am expected to accept this treatment as an essential part of life and not question it.

This kind of insensitivity thus has its roots in the abuse a person suffered as a child. He or she may be able to remember what happened, but in most cases the emotional content of the whole experience of being beaten and humiliated has been completely repressed.

This is where the difference lies between treating an adult and a child cruelly. The self has not yet sufficiently developed for a child to retain the memory of it or of the feelings it arouses. The knowledge that you were beaten and that this, as your parents tell you, what for your own good may well be retained (although not always), but the suffering caused by the way you were mistreated will remain unconscious and will later prevent you from empathizing with others. This is why battered children grow up to be mothers and fathers who beat their own offspring; from their ranks are recruited the most reliable executioners, concentration-camp supervisors, prison guards, and torturers. They beat, mistreat, and torture out of an inner compulsion to repeat their own history, and they are able to do this without the slightest feeling of sympathy for their victims because they have identified with the aggressive side of their psyche. These people were beaten and humiliated themselves at such an early age that it was never possible for them to experience consciously the helpless, battered child they once were. In order to do this, they would have needed the aid of an understanding, supportive adult, and no such person was available. Only under these circumstances would children be able to see themselves as they are at that moment – namely, as weak, helpless, downtrodden, and battered – and thus be able to integrate this part into the self. [Let's take this to heart: they are *all* our children. We have to get past this habit we have of taking care of... our parents... essentially... the adults... and start taking care of those beautiful children... and let them see... with our own affect... with our own reaction... that what they are experiencing is suffering... and that it matters... and that it's wrong... – P.S.]

[The January 31, 2016 show ends here.]

[“160207cronianpropensity_1.mp3”:]

The February 7, 2016 show – themes and things: The 'Cronian'-propensity of states... with the additional element of almost-complete planetary non-renewable 'resource'-depletion (i.e.... 'the system' can't generate enough 'jobs' for the global population...)” and... “what would a wholistic 'Self'-defense education look like that would address our (we-the-people's) lack

of autonomy and our vulnerability to 'power's attempts to divide us?...” and... “forming ourselves into 'a people' demanding the right to pursue happiness... both as 'a people'... and as fully developing individualities...” and... “implementing our anti-coercion commitments to our children ...” and... “how do we begin to develop our 'global-focus-of-the-alternative' commitment?...” and: “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 13... pages 85 – 91)

February 2, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: What we have been doing... I now see... thanks to Alice... and Bentham... and Karl Popper (I didn't see... when I wrote *Waking Up*... the degree to which the conscious intent of a self-organized tribe of 'Arrogants'... to re-design us... 'design' empathy out of us... all of us... globally... was behind our rapidly growing dehumanization...) is attempting to break into... break through... the totalitarian conditioning of 'class'... which is extremely hard to do... because of a 'power'-installed totalitarian child-rearing... and its continuation in totalitarian 'education'... – plugged into a 'system' of coerced-work... a scheme that keeps us working without thinking... or 'thinking' only with the thoughts... and for the tasks... given us – until... like those who built Auschwitz... we “work ourselves out of a job...” which is this 'moment' we are in. Now... it's hard for us to wrap our minds around this because 'class' conditioning is totalitarian... and we want to please our parents...

...but this... 'Cronian'-propensity of states (the Greek god Cronus ate his male children... fearing one would de-throw him... and... by the way... there is a painting by Goya that is an amazing depiction of this...) has always existed... with the existence of the state itself...

...add the additional element of almost-complete planetary non-renewable 'resource'-depletion (i.e.... 'the system' can't generate enough 'jobs' for the global population – so... knowing 'power'... knowing its utter and complete contempt for us... across the ages of 'class'... think: the millions of us it slaughters at a clip without suffering a moment's ill rest... what do you suppose are its plans for us?..)

...and we see... predictably...this tendency of states to 'weed out its recalcitrants'... and 'winnow the populace'...has shifted into high gear. All over the world you see it happening: states slaughtering their own people – whether openly... as in the case of Syria and Egypt... or through secret collaborators as we see in Nigeria and Mexico... or both... or on the 'down-low'... as exists in the U.S.... and in all states... no doubt... with sufficient means... or through intermediaries... by spreading ill-health and disease. Why... here in the U.S.... did we imagine ourselves exempt... when it's been a project in progress since the state's inception... though generally directed against those utterly without defense: the low-income... those with the highest degree of coercion imposed...

To recognize this is not to suggest that it become our focus... just the opposite... it is to suggest that we turn away from it... away from 'power's death-compulsion... and to... our lives renewed in the light of truth... in which light... we see what we must do...

Just as... as we learned from Alice... re-experiencing rage... with the elucidating force of truth – of the right story – does not make us resentful people but newly vivid and alive ones... so too... on the wider range of our existence... and our responsibility... as global-humans... are we newly prepared... and determined... to stand with our Brothers and Sisters. Together we can do this: end the repetition-compulsion of the Plato's Tribesmen... de-commission the global-coerced-work system... and begin planning and implementing our de-centralized... non-coercive... alternative.

In recent shows we have been calling attention to the global-coerced-work system's disintegration. Today we'll consider some of the repercussions and consequences of that fact... including... large numbers of folk who are desperate and before whom 'power' will dangle 'Division'-work – and this before we have a chance to develop and implement our 'Self-defense-work to address the abusiveness of 'class' – and think more about our strategic global response.

[“160207wheresourglobalvision_2.mp3”:]

In our word-beat: “150109_thecon_econ.mp3” – with spoken-word from the July 14, 2013 show – we said that “The wage work system destroys our empathy... the surveillance state destroys our trust... each one of us is meant to grow our full gifts... division... coercion... and necessity forestalls their development... the hiding and pretense warps our humanness... and absolutely none of it (not remotely...) brings us happiness.”

Now that Alice has explained the psychological dynamics at work – the cruelty toward children – that lead to the destruction of the human capacity for empathy... as well as the consequences of that destruction... it is not over-simplification to say that 'lack of empathy' is our 'problem-in-chief' to overcome... in order for us to gain our freedom... as global humans.

But how to address it?... and in such a way that the prize of global-freedom – the end of the global-'class'-system – is kept clearly in view? We have been arguing that what is needed is anti-coercion education... incorporated into “wholistic 'Self-defense practices...”

A couple of insights from Alice... as well as some thoughts from a recent show... bear on this question of designing anti-coercion education... and wholistic 'Self-defense practices – toward building mutually reinforcing (and overlapping) movements to: claim our right as a people here in the U.S. to pursue happiness (which is also reclaiming our authentic selves...) and plan 'global-system'-de-commissioning – while simultaneously joining in a global conversation on the world we want: “...founded on the opposite (to 'class') operating premises of non-coercion... mutual aid... decentralization... limitless time... freedom from necessity... no hierarchy... fully-developing individualities (freedom to grow our unique earth-given gifts...) and the fulfillment of collective aims through our cooperative associations...” (From our November 15, 2015 show – p. 5 above.)

(And I have to say... this is what Kropotkin was saying a century ago... and yet I am not hearing this among anarchists today – and he's a 'Founding Father' of the 'anarchist' body of knowledge and thinking. And I know... if they don't... that that is largely due to infiltration of folk who continuously redirect away from those basic concepts and aims... which comprise the alternative that we want and need today... and the fact that his global vision and goal is not being discussed [is not the *only* thing being discussed... with single-mindedness of purpose...] is proof enough of the reality of infiltration... Kropotkin could not have been more clear... or more powerful – and yet... nothing is done with that... nothing is being done with the basic notion of a *global* system-redesign... which we had reiterated by our Good Three – Terence K. Hopkins... Giovanni Arrighi... and Immanuel Wallerstein – thirty years ago... nothing done with this notion that it is *not* within a nation-state that we can get free. Is that still a goal of anarchism today?... getting free... and if it is... is it a global goal?... a global vision? What has become of our global vision of a redesign of a world... not into a 'system'... but into a world *society*?... a global arrangement of humans which is completely cooperative... without coercion. What has become of that vision out in the world? I know I'm not going to hear it on KPFA... but I don't hear it as a *focus* – the only practical... strategic... expression of which is organizing Global General Strikes as an on-going effort... until we get our freedom – within the local anarchist Infoshop... at least as represented by their publication. So what is up with that? I'm issuing a challenge to folks on the Left: Where is the global vision? Why is it not being spoken over and over? Why can we not be as dedicated and determined as those tiny... tiny... point-zero-zero-zero-one-percent?... who have been ruling us for two and a half centuries... and have gotten *very* used to it... It will not be a simple thing to move these guys out of their illusions of divinity... We have to claim our power as human beings... with the single-mindedness of purpose and focus that we are confronted with. We are seven billion... they are ten thousand – this is imminently doable with our global means of communication – instantaneous communication – and organizing... It is long past time that we got busy.)

[“160207empathykeytofreedom_3.mp3”:]

Alice: “Learning is a result of listening, which in turn leads to even better listening and attentiveness to the other person... and empathy grows as we learn.” (Quoted in our January 24, 2016 show.)

(And I'm going to encourage us to think about that in terms of wholistic self-defense that is simultaneously focused on defending the *world* we want... as well as our particular self... in order to keep our focus on 'the prize' [we'll expand on this next week...] So this notion of 'listening' that I'm encouraging us to think about is not about listening to each other's troubles... I'm sure that is tempting when we come together... as political people... to develop and move forward our freedom... but we are in a very critical moment... and I'm going to... as I encouraged folk to think about that *global* vision... and re-inhabiting that global vision... I'm also going to encourage us to set aside holding each other's hands around our personal dilemmas – and we'll qualify this obviously because “the personal is political...” etc. etc....

...I'm sort of reacting to something I read in a recent anarchist paper... which just reminded me how important it is that we stay focused on our prize... because it is guaranteed that there are folks infiltrating trying to divert us from that focus... I mean... 'global-power-folk' have a lot of resources... they are not just in anarchist organizations... they're in cafes and grocery

stores – this is what I mean about 'seriously wanting to influence our thinking...' they are not just in traditional media outlets... they have insinuated themselves into public space period... Again... this is not about trying to ferret folk out... or be suspicious of one another... just the opposite... we all manifest the state... but it is simply for us to help each other stay on task... stay focused on getting our freedom... and develop some loving ways to do that... so that it *feels* loving... and not as some sort of artificial adherence to some rule...

“Obedience, coercion, severity, and lack of feeling are no longer recognized as absolute values. But the road to the realization of the new ideals is frequently blocked by the need to repress the sufferings of one's childhood, and this leads to a lack of empathy.” (Quoted in our November 22, 2015 show.)

“151004pursuehappinessasapeople.mp3”: “...On the one hand... we have the codified right here in the U.S. to... *as a people...* pursue happiness... on the other... the state... by definition... disallows our pursuit of happiness because it disallows our formation *into* a people... 'The state' is an absolutely essential mechanism of management for 'power' – management of our inherent drive to self-creation (happiness...) because 'power' cannot exist if we do not forfeit our earth-given gift of self-development... individual and collective... and yet... the circumstances must be so finessed... that it *seems* we do not forfeit it... else 'power' loses its carefully crafted legitimacy... and their game is up... But it is a dangerous pass for 'power' – when we strive to grow our gifts – and so a dangerous one for us... They make it so... particularly when numbers of us are doing it... in some sense – in some sense of a budding and building consciousness – together. They have amassed weapons and propaganda mechanisms for this moment... this moment when... globally... we would finally get that 'the state' exists to repress... not assist... 'the people' – that is what it was designed for... that is why it exists... and it will fulfill that function no matter what we 'think' about it. Yet it is only by becoming 'a people' that we can challenge it... and here in the U.S. we have the legal leverage to accomplish this without the state being able to use overt repression against it... for to do so would completely de-legitimate it – we have the legal leverage to come together as a people that discusses the question: “what do we require as a people to be happy?...” – a question that will rapidly become a conversation about coercion... which will rapidly be exposed as harassment imposed by craft... the craft of manufacturing scarcity... given the enormous abundance of the earth... given that we have the means to work together globally. But our ability to claim that necessary identity: our organization into 'a people' – necessary in order to check 'power's ruthlessness – has been... as Marcuse said... effectively repressed... requiring an opposite education... new information... new teachers who model what it means to be 'fully-developing' – so that this is a quality of our 'aliveness' that we are not willing to forfeit anymore. And 'the state' is warring on precisely these: on fully-developing individualities... to seek to become which... is the most radical political act under 'class'. Knowing this... knowing that there is no other way to our freedom... will allow us to stop procrastinating and get on with it... get this 'job' done... we know we must... our survival as human beings who are fully-developing... requires it.” – [From the October 4, 2015 *Waking Up Radio* show.]

In sum... the global-state-statesmen effectively checked our right to pursue happiness here in the U.S.... with the coerced-work system... because coercion destroys our empathy... and with it all hope for happiness... because the pursuit of happiness requires freedom from necessity – requires full possession of our own lives... i.e.: no coercion.

It was the 'contemplative life' – leisure... freedom from necessity – that the 'Founders' had in mind when they added “the right to pursue happiness” to those “self-evident rights” named in the Declaration of Independence...

[“160207oftimeworkandleisure_4.mp3”:]

And as Sebastian de Grazia (another suppressed ancestor... whose masterful work... *Of Time, Work and Leisure*... has been purged from the Berkeley Public Library...) says:

...when... the Declaration of Independence [speaks] of “all men,” and the Constitution of “We, the People,” they do not necessarily intend the adult population or even all adult males. Neither the first nor the second group voted for the delegates to the Constitutional Convention. Nor does [John] Locke have all adult males in mind when he writes that in a careful and constant pursuit of true and solid happiness lies the highest perfection of intellectual nature. The men referred to are those to whom what they say is self-evident, a small body of self-appointed citizens and delegates with the firm intention to write into existence their ideal of the good life....

...The nineteenth century was to raise the hue and cry to define men more precisely than with the vagueness that meant gentlemen. Once the revolutionary generation passes on, clouds of bewilderment swirl around the pursuit of happiness. Since the phrase occurs in so many historic documents, the courts are soon hard put to cut a clean swath. To go into all the variants, or simply all the main lines of argument pro and con, that the courts took from the pursuit of happiness would take a full tome, but the trend is clear enough to be stated briefly. In a first step, as we have seen, property provides the means through which one can find one's happiness; next, property and work are necessary for happiness, and then through work alone can happiness be found... (p. 267)

...For us the import is this. Only through work, a new fundamental right [i.e.... one unrecognizable to the 'Founders'... – P.S.], can men (all adult males and some females) pursue happiness. The original idea was the reverse: only through not having to work can men pursue happiness. Not surprisingly, then, that those idlers and drones who lived by this last notion, the gentry who wrote or approved the Virginia Bill of Rights and the Declaration of Independence, never did an honest day's work in their lives. [And this applies to all the subsequent 'classical civilization'-fabricators and Plato's Republic-realizers... dubbed in these pages: 'Plato's Tribesmen... – P. S.] (p. 269)

[Lord] James Bryce was right in saying that the Founding Fathers had gone back 2,000 years for the source of their ideas. (Sebastian de Grazia, *Of Time, Work, and Leisure*, p. 265)

No doubt when subsequent courts tried to rob us of our right to pursue happiness by demolishing the original concept of the 'Founders'... they did so on the basis that "thinking had evolved..." well... 'thinking' has now 'evolved' back to the original concept... in the recognition that to pursue happiness we have to own our own lives... literally... we must have no masters... we must be free of necessity...

[“160207ourtimetobehappiness_5.mp3”:]

Those who established – and 'manage' still – behind scenes – the 'global-class-system'... never could... never would... imagine for us the contemplative life they want for themselves... and... Cronus'-all... they have hoped to so hobble us – with lies... with servile 'education'... with endless worry and toil – that it would never occur to us to challenge their definitions... or hope for ourselves the relaxed... contemplative... leisurely life they demand for themselves... in order to pretend they are 'citizens' of the 'Republic'... or 'philosopher-kings'... 'critically-needed'... to 'think'... to ensure that it is 'logic' and 'reason' – embodied in the 'verifiable' and 'proven' 'best'... that make the decisions... for all the rest of us – for seven billion... who are then condemned to being pawns... sacrificial lambs...and collateral damage... in the 'power'-plays and machinations of the Tiny Ten Thousand... who winnow our numbers to wipe out the 'superfluous' – as determined by their absurd compulsions which they parade as 'logic'.

It's important that we understand this 'founding intent'... still very much alive in today's 'statesmen'... to keep we-commoners subservient – for that's the point of it – which forms the *basis* of the 'right to pursue happiness' (in the 'Founders' warped sense... on the back of a 'slave' system...) – important to the solidification of our 'will'... important that we grasp the full import of our task...

The issue is whether we will determine... *for ourselves*... that it's time for us to be 'people' too... to be fully human and self-determinative... as the 'Founders' strove to do...

(...though it was a goal beyond them... hobbled in their blindness by their fear... their early childhood experience of not being sufficient as they were... at birth... but... ever-restless... must 'pursue' a 'proof' of their 'worth'... in the 'purity' of their 'reason'... of their 'intellect'... in the complete suppression... of their authentic selves... in order to 'be'... what they were told was 'better'... and which they then set about to achieve... with a rigor... and a ruthless focus... that had no 'use' for 'love' – defeated before begun... when they 'self-limited'... they predetermined their own broken-ness... reliving... repeating... that compulsion... from their early childhoods... Clearly... these are not the ones who offer guidance ...to authentic freedom...)

...but could never do... as a requirement for their striving was the denial of our common humanity... based in an inherent freedom that is earth-given... and not a phony one 'bestowed' by artifice... by an artificial construction called 'the state'... which they made (and this wasn't that long ago... when this seems like an overwhelming task... that we are confronted with a totalitarian set of messages... via media and education... conditioning that presents the illusion of permanence... that 'nothing else can be but this'... it is that that we are breaking out of right now... in having these conversations with each other

– this is a *newly-installed* totalitarianism... so let's not be fooled by the magician's trick of having every voice we hear whisper in our ears the same messages... that is not the extent of our possibilities... or of thought... which they made precisely for the purpose of propping up their pretense of being 'masters'... a pretense sprung from the 'class'-bound illusions of their early childhood traumas... that demanded there be 'slaves'...

When Alice says that we don't question that which is a continuation of our childhoods... she could as well have put it that we don't question our repetition compulsions. The coerced-work system generates an unconscious rage in us that is a continuation of our childhoods... a rage at being forced... forced to be 'good'... to perform... to accept that our feelings are irrelevant and to be suppressed...

...and in being forced to work we relive our early childhood trauma of abandonment... of not being seen... of having to earn whatever recognition we were given...

...the base mindset of 'class' is a base trauma... This cannot be what we want for our future... So why do we assume it? Why do we hobble ourselves... self-limit... and forfeit what we want before begun... to contemplate our future?

—

[“160207howwegetourfreedom_6.mp3”:]

So what is the 'self-defense practice' that fully restores our human-ness... that embraces the 'self' in a wholistic sense... that dares to face the 'class'-context that creates the wounds in the first place?

Before we begin... we must ask ourselves what it is we want to defend. The 'self-defense practice we engage in must ask – being as concrete as possible: “What is 'the self' that we want to defend?”... and... “What is the *world* that we want to defend?”... and then... “How... if at all... are these two things different?” – We've never been asked – not by parents... not by 'rulers' – we must ask these things of ourselves... in order to grow... as global humans...

Once we come together and discuss it I think we will agree... that to be happy as a people... or to be happy individually... we require good fellowship... and the ability to grow our gifts without coercion of any kind – we can learn this from newborn babies... we can learn this from our bodies...

...and I think we will see... that in following our questions (listening to the earth... and the ancestors...) we 'make'... 'create'... ourselves...

...and in listening to each other... we 'make'... 'create'... ourselves...

...and in listening to our bodies... we 'make'... 'create'... ourselves...

...and that... is happiness...

Peter Kropotkin has shown us that there are two base mindsets... two basic operating premises... for humans: 'Authority' and freedom... We've been stuck in 'Authority' for ten thousand years or more... and we came to accept it – those of us stuck in it – because it was equated with 'progress'... because it was what our parents taught us... and because we were compelled... by a lot of violence – which eventually came to be organized... 'managed'... by the state... which we were trained to view as the parent... which would 'protect' us... if we obeyed.

But now we see the game... the game of 'power'... of 'supremacy'... of 'rule'... of control of the Many by the Few... see... that we are nothing to it... that by its terms we must stay as children... we're ready...

...for something new.

Everything we do must be with a purpose... a dedication... a commitment... to freedom. That is how we get it.

—

[“160207thatwhichtheyhate_7.mp3”:]

“Reflections of '3.7': the November 15, 2015 Show” (p. 3 above):

The arrogance of 'power' has no bottom...
Does our grief?
Can we forgive our parents for the injury done...
...that we were never seen?
Can we trust... that just as the earth is abundant... and is subject... to the rule of eternal renewal...
...so is our love...
...and that once...
...the unnatural... ignoble... and blind woundedness of these lost abandoned children who 'made themselves'... into a
heartless Tribe of 'power'... of Plato... to 'prove' they are deserving of our worship... so that they may destroy us in the excess
of their hate... destroying... in absentia... with a hate that has no bottom... that which they hate: their parents...

[“160207ragesofsuppressedpersecution_8.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

This is where the difference lies between treating an adult and a child cruelly. The self has not yet sufficiently developed for a child to retain the memory of it or of the feelings it arouses. The knowledge that you were beaten and that this, as your parents tell you, what for your own good may well be retained (although not always), but the suffering caused by the way you were mistreated will remain unconscious and will later prevent you from empathizing with others. This is why battered children grow up to be mothers and fathers who beat their own offspring; from their ranks are recruited the most reliable executioners, concentration-camp supervisors, prison guards, and torturers. They beat, mistreat, and torture out of an inner compulsion to repeat their own history, and they are able to do this without the slightest feeling of sympathy for their victims because they have identified with the aggressive side of their psyche. These people were beaten and humiliated themselves at such an early age that it was never possible for them to experience consciously the helpless, battered child they once were. In order to do this, they would have needed the aid of an understanding, supportive adult, and no such person was available. Only under these circumstances would children be able to see themselves as they are at that moment – namely, as weak, helpless, downtrodden, and battered – and thus be able to integrate this part into the self.

Theoretically, a child beaten by his father could afterwards cry his heart out in the arms of a kind aunt and tell her what happened; she would not try to minimize the child's pain or justify the father's actions but would give the whole experience its due weight. But such good fortune is rare. The wife of a child-beating father shares his attitude toward child-rearing or is herself his victim – in either case, she is rarely the child's advocate, such an aunt is therefore a great exception, because the battered child is very unlikely to have that inner freedom to seek her out and make use of her. A child is more likely to opt for a terrible inner isolation and splitting off of his feelings than he is to “tattle” to outsiders about his father or mother. Psychotherapists know how long it sometimes takes before a child's resentment, which has been repressed for thirty or forty or even fifty years, can be articulated and re-lived.

Thus, it may well be that the plight of a little child who is abused is even worse and has more serious consequences for society than the plight of an adult in a concentration camp. The former camp inmate may sometimes find himself in a situation where he feels that he can never adequately communicate the horror of what he has gone through and that others approach him without understanding, with cold and callous indifference, even with disbelief, but with few exceptions he himself will not doubt the tragic nature of his experiences. He will never attempt to convince himself that the cruelty he was subjected to was for his own good or interpret the absurdity of the camp as a necessary pedagogical measure; he will usually not attempt to empathize with the motives of his persecutors. He will find people who have had similar experiences and share with them his feelings of outrage, hatred, and despair over the cruelty he has suffered.

The abused child does not have any of these options. As I have tried to show in the example of Christiane F., She is alone with her suffering, not only within the family but also within herself. And because she cannot share her pain with anyone, she is also unable to create a place in her own soul where she could “cry her heart out.” No arms of a “kind aunt” exist there; “Keep a stiff upper lip and be brave,” is the watchword. Defenselessness and helplessness find no haven in the self of the child, who later, identifying with the aggressor, persecutes these qualities wherever they appear.

A person who from the beginning was forced, whether subjected to corporal punishment or not, to stifle, i.e., to condemn, split off, and persecute, the vital child within himself will spend his whole life preventing this inner danger that he associates with spontaneous feelings from recurring. But psychological forces are so tenacious that they can rarely be thoroughly

suppressed. They are constantly seeking outlets that will enable them to survive, often in very distorted forms that are not without danger to society. For example, one person suffering from grandiosity will project his own childish qualities onto the external world, whereas another will struggle against the “evil” within himself. “Poisonous pedagogy” shows how these two mechanisms are related to each other and how they are combined in a traditional religious upbringing.

In addition to the degree of maturity and those elements of loyalty and isolation involved in the case of a child, there is another fundamental difference between abuse of children and of adults. The abused inmates of a concentration camp cannot of course offer any resistance, cannot defend themselves against humiliation, but they are inwardly free to hate their persecutors. The opportunity to experience their feelings, even to share them with other inmates, prevents them from having to surrender their self. This opportunity does not exist for children. They *must not* hate their father – this, the message of the Fourth Commandment, has been drummed into them from early childhood; they *cannot* hate him either, if they must fear losing his love as a result; finally, they do not even *want* to hate him, because they love him. Thus, children, unlike concentration-camp inmates, are confronted by a tormenter they love, not one they hate, and this tragic complication will have a devastating influence on their entire subsequent life. Christiane F. writes:

I never hated him but was just afraid of him. I was always proud of him, too. Because he loved animals and because he had such a terrific car, his '62 Porsche.

[“160207wewhohavefoundourvoices_9.mp3”:]

...A child conditioned to be well-behaved must not notice what she is feeling, but asks herself what she *ought* to feel... [It cannot be emphasized enough: the damage done to us... particularly here in the U.S... by a 'class'-conditioning in subservience to the state (in any of its many guises...) that robs us of our access to our true 'selves'... our true feelings... which means... among other things... that each one of us who chooses to look past... grow beyond... this totalitarian conditioning... to the de-commissioning of 'class'... and to the planning of our non-coercive... de-centralized... cooperative... future... must accept that we represent... that we literally speak for many known and unknown 'others'... who have not yet found their voices... whose true feelings have been stifled and have not yet risen to their conscious minds (their feelings... their voices...) It also means... that we are called upon to fully use our creativity and love... to design our anti-coercion education means that speak directly to our particular location's artistic predilections... needs and gifts... that embrace wholistically... and model the spontaneity and honesty of fresh life... And we must trust... that whatever may be the initial reception in our Brothers and Sisters – authentic or not – the words... the model... transmit a potency with which the listener... the observer... must sit... and ponder a bit... – P.S.]

Christiane was forced to learn at an early age that love and acceptance can be bought only by denying one's own needs, impulses, and feelings (such as hate, disgust, and aversion) – at the high price of surrender of self. She now directs all her efforts toward attaining this loss of self, i.e., to being cool. That is why the word cool occurs on nearly every page of the book. In order to reach this state and be free of unwanted feelings, she starts using hashish...

...The main thing, however, is that she can regulate, control, and manipulate everything herself. Just as her father previously succeeded in bringing the child's feelings under control, in keeping with his needs, by beating her, the thirteen-year-old girl now attempts to manipulate her mood by taking drugs...

When the drugs Christiane has been using no longer give her the desired control over her emotions, she switches to heroin at the age of thirteen...

“The Hidden Logic of Absurd Behavior”

Christiane's story awakens such feelings of despair and helplessness in sympathetic readers that they probably would like most of all to forget about it as quickly as possible by passing it all off as a fabrication. But they are unable to, because they sense that she has told the unvarnished truth. If they go beyond the outer trappings of the story and permit themselves, as they read, to consider *why* it happened, they will find an accurate description of the nature not only of addiction but of other forms of human behavior [under conditions of 'total-immersion'-coercion'... i.e... under 'class'... – P.S.] as well that are conspicuous at times for their absurdity and that our logic is unable to explain. When we are confronted with adolescent heroin addicts

who are ruining their lives, we are all too readily inclined to try to reach them with rational arguments or still worse, with efforts to “educate” them. In fact, many therapeutic groups work in this direction. They substitute one evil for another instead of trying to help these young people see what function addiction actually has in their lives and how they are unconsciously using it to communicate something to the outside world... [And that is so patently true... and yet never discussed – but further evidence that our lives are constructed for us... that we are stuck within a system of coercion... our thoughts conditioned... given to us... – and it is only by our own independent efforts that we break out of it... – P.S.]

[The February 7, 2016 show ends here.]

[“160214isemffreesleeppossible_1.mp3”:]

The February 14, 2016 show – :

February 13, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: A brief update on the injury to my wrist... forgive the indulgence... but I sense it may be best to self-represent while I have the chance. The nurse-friend of Martial-artist-Kate said she could connect me with an x-ray and osteopath... but the cell phone conversation with my son on this broke up before we exchanged relevant information... and she and her husband were on their way out of town (I don't know for how long...) to some hot-springs-location with apparently bad cell phone reception...

...and as... the daily-increasing harassment ... targeting... punishment... and attacking... of the past six years – seeing how many folks are... and how easily... recruited to these tasks – has left me feeling extremely unsafe in the world (I mean... I literally cannot go outside at any time of day... night... or early AM hour without being reminded via their functionaries that 'they' know my every move... whether with headlights coming on up the street at 3 AM... or some among their minions... on foot or in vehicles... crossing my path as I'm leaving the house or driving to some destination – this is a tactic I've not heard discussed... so I'm mentioning it: the isolating effect of being literally surrounded by teams of folks who wish you ill – so say nothing of the isolating effect of being tortured invisibly... so you are unable to receive any support...)

...it's important to me that I go to someone that is recommended by someone I trust... and the number of supportive people physically in my life has dramatically shrunk since writing *Waking Up*... to basically Kate and my son... I know there are folks who listen to this show who understand this and are supportive... but I have zero such in my physical world. To be beat-up on constantly without response... is not in our nature as living things... but this has been my portion for years now. I am trying to figure out how to change this.

On a much more minor topic: I discovered after returning to typing up Proudhon after a six-week break from it that some minor typos (e.g... a comma inserted in the space between words that altered or confused the sentence's meaning...) had appeared in the original text document that were not in the pdf... I hesitated a bit replacing the older with the latest draft... but I didn't see any way around it... so I'm also trying to figure out how to ensure the integrity of the machine (computer) I work on.

And... since we're naming things... anyone know how to create a sleeping space that is EMF-free? Interestingly... as Earthships was one of the tactics recommended in *Waking Up* for addressing our self-sufficiency needs...) it seems it may be that microwaves can't penetrate earth... but as excavation is not in the cards just yet... any other suggestions?... I mean from righteous folk... not from the children of Abandonment.

[“160214constructedrealityofdivision_2.mp3”:]

The February 14, 2016 show – themes and things: “The importance of 'the right story'...” and... “What would a wholistic 'Self-defense practice look like that would address our (we-the-people's) lack of autonomy and our vulnerability to 'power's attempts to divide us?...” and... “First steps toward forming ourselves into 'a people' demanding the right to pursue happiness... both as 'a people'... and as fully developing individualities...” and... “Seeing reality...” and... as always...: “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 14... pages 92 – 98)

February 10, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: What would a wholistic 'Self-defense practice look like that would address our (we-the-people's) lack of autonomy and our vulnerability to 'power's attempts to divide us?... that would help us become people who could help point the way out of the 'class'-system... and towards a de-centralized... fully-cooperative... global society based in mutual aid – moving towards a global 'good fellowship'. Because Alice understood that the growing problem of 'diminishing empathy'... of empathy... in a sense... being 'designed out of us'... we who are caught in the global-'class'-system – because she understood that this problem is systemic... in being inculcated by means of a 'power'-transmitted and fed and continuously expanding pedagogy of 'child-rearing'... she has much to say to guide us out of that system.

But it is one thing to read Alice within the false frame of “power-endemic-in-the-human-condition”... and quite another to read her integrated within the clear picture of “power's orchestrated plan since the French Revolution...” – within the true context of “power's conscious intent to *construct* a 'reality' consistent with a two thousand (plus)-year old vision of rigid... fixed... 'class' divisions...”

[“160214claimingmylostbits_3.mp3”:]

(I've been trying to get clearer in my own mind why Alice is both key and insufficient. I read Alice Miller when my son was a baby and was not able to do enough with it... and I've been wondering why not... because I've been... to some degree... consciously trying to reclaim my lost bits... my wholeness... for some time now: with Alice... with martial arts... by going into the trades... And so today's show is in large measure my answer to myself... and we'll be... as we go along... testing whether it is in fact an answer to that question: “why were these efforts insufficient to set... to ground... and source... a determination that was unequivocal... that could not be turned back – and of course material survival is not to be ignored... and we have to talk more about that...)

[...and I have to say this: when I say that I cannot 'not-move' without getting 'hit' I hope you understand that that includes when I'm doing this show...)]

[“160214coercedworkisrightframe_4.mp3”:]

It is one thing to read Alice within the false frame of “power-endemic-in-the-human-condition”... and quite another to read her integrated within the clear picture of “power's orchestrated plan since the French Revolution...” – within the true context of “power's conscious intent to *construct* a 'reality' consistent with a two thousand (plus)-year old vision of rigid... fixed... 'class' divisions...” In the first case... 'Alice' tends to read like an individual responsibility (to heal from one's own history of abuse... and to not pass it on to your child...) – an individual responsibility that dovetails with a larger 'social' responsibility to be “part of the solution” by helping to “foster peace in the world...” But Alice's analysis is missing critical pieces of the puzzle of our dilemma... trapped in compulsory mistreatment of each other... as... the “repetition compulsions” she calls our attention to of we-trapped are entirely artifacts of the global-coerced-work-system... a 'system' which did not come about by happenstance... but by conscious act...

...and an incomplete analysis... in this instance... means an inaccurate analysis... one that cannot provide us with solutions.

For instance... when Alice writes that “a child beaten by his father... is very unlikely to have [the] inner freedom to [seek out a 'kind aunt'] and make use of her...” and is much “more likely to opt for a terrible inner isolation and splitting off of his feelings than he is to “tattle” to outsiders about his father or mother...”

...she is pointing out the problem of our atomization... a key element of the 'Panopticon' design for 'social control' of the Many by the Few... And framed this way: “atomization as a conscious tactic...” we can discuss ways to overcome it that are authentic... i.e. based in an accurate analysis... by which we know that it is the opposite of 'atomization' that we want for our future – and in our transitional efforts and practices...

...and when she calls attention to the central role of secrecy and lying and utilitarianism in the poisonous pedagogy of child-rearing... of the totalitarian control of thought... she is describing the Plato-derived strategy that Karl Popper and Martin Bernal write about as the ideological and political stance of 'statesmen' toward 'their' subject populations... Framed this way...

we know that the scale – both in material-physical-geographic as well as in spiritual scope – of the problem must be addressed by any response effective in gaining our freedom...

...i.e.... 'child-rearing is not just one part of a larger strategic ideological assault on the Many by the Few... one of many 'poisonous pedagogies'... systematically institutionalized... and increasingly so – and in a coordinated manner around the globe – as the decades passed after the French Revolution...

...but as an arena for our resistance entirely insufficient... abstracted as it's been from the bigger picture of 'power's totalitarian global ambition... and concerted plans for achieving it...

Withholding critical information is a key 'power'-strategy. Recall what Rousseau said – discussed in our January 10, 2016 show (and Hitler expressed a version of this: “It also gives us a very special, secret pleasure to see how unaware the people around us are of what is really happening to them...”):

...with your pupil; always let him think he is the master, but always be it yourself. There is no more perfect form of subjection than the one that preserves the appearance of freedom; thus does the will itself become captive. The poor child, who knows nothing, can do nothing, and has no experience – is he not at your mercy? Are you not in control of everything in his environment that relates to him? Can you not control his impressions as you please?... His tasks, his games, his pleasures, his troubles – is all this not in your hands without his knowing it? Doubtlessly, he may do as he wishes, but he may wish only what you want him to; he may not take a single step that you have not anticipated,, he may not open his mouth without your knowing what he is going to say. [This man could easily have been the father that Hitler so hated... – P.S.]

[“160214seeingtheircompulsion_5.mp3”:]

In the absence of sufficient information – e.g.... “the conscious (though compulsive) construction of a false 'reality' by the Few in the service of their compulsions...” or... “that our bodies tell the truth... while the 'the system' lies...” or... “the function addiction actually has in [our] lives...” or... the damage done by the routinized abandonment of our children... and the destruction of 'the self' in not knowing we must learn from our children (and each other... unmediated by 'the system'...)” – in the absence of a clear picture – the right story – we compromise our love... we equivocate with our body's knowledge... we forfeit our souls... following ghosts.

To know that we are faced with conscious... determined... unequivocal... actors... who have amassed tremendous resources to suppress us... and who desperately want to be 'free' of us... of all 'dependence'... all 'weakness'...

...is all-determinative of our strategic response.

So Alice makes a mighty contribution to our needed strategic reply to the systematized abuse of our lives... in explaining the psychological dynamics at play... not the least of which is... that these damaged... brutalized... manipulated... children of Abandonment... made into tools for the realization of sterile concepts... of a mission pounded into them by fathers trapped in repetition compulsions...

...unequivocally... hate us / hate their fathers / hate themselves...

...unequivocally are set... to be rid of all resistance... and of us altogether... in a sense...by winnowing our numbers to the barest minimum.

[“160214truthisthirdphase_6.mp3”:]

For them... for us... the issue (claiming the future...) has become one of energy and balance.

Recall what Alice said... that those whose authentic selves have been entirely suppressed – and of none is this more comprehensively... totally... the case... than those conditioned to believe they exist only to serve the 'perfect state'... i.e....

the mission of establishing 'Perfection'... – that such as this have no access to their own vitality... and are possessed by a longing to destroy others' vitality wherever they see it... are possessed by a hatred that is insatiable...

...which translates in such... who have amassed massive resources for the purpose of murdering us – our vitality... spiritual and physical – into a tremendous capacity for destructiveness...

The result is a 'social arrangement' wildly out of balance with available resources... for their compulsion is to destroy... consume... without cessation... their appetite for death cannot be sated.

And the imposition of their compulsion on us... means we are caught up in them... have... in a temporary sense... become them...

...for as long as they (to our minds... seem to...) feed us... hold our attention... claim our time... they hold back our natural process of seeking balance... achieving our wholeness... claiming our power...

But they have butt up against the planet's physical limits... butt up against material limits for doing that... purchasing our attention... buying our time – which is just another way of saying that the global-coerced-work system is disintegrating...

Life is ever-seeking balance... and life in us is strong... we want to listen to our bodies... we want authentic knowledge... we want good fellowship...

...we want freedom... but we have never been asked... and we have never asked ourselves... to define it...

The issue for us can be stated in terms of energy: we want access to our vitality... to our full power... our wholeness...

...and claiming our wholeness... is 'self'-creation... is happiness...

I described our wholeness in *Waking Up* as having access to all three 'phases' of our power – the ancestors... the earth... and each other – which correspond with 'mind'... 'body'... and 'spirit'...

The martial arts help us claim the vitality of our bodies fully... Alice helps us claim the vitality of our souls fully... and the truth – the right story – is the third phase... and we need all three to have access to our full vitality...

So what would a world be that supported our full access to our own energy?... and how do we get it?... if not by *being* it?

Before we begin... picture the world you want to live in... picture it vivid... in rich detail... its social arrangements... its structures for living... what happens in them... how closely spaced are they... these structures?... what lay between?... how do we relate to each other?... what are the lives we lead?... are they leisurely?

We are arguing that the main threats to us are due... to a world created by the Few.

Asking ourselves... “What is the world we want?...” is asking our *bodies* what they want.

What is the world we must form... that with our bodies conforms?

...after which the question comes: how do we make ourselves into the kind of humans that inhabit... support... reproduce... and maintain... *that* world.

—

[“160214ourrootoftruth_7.mp3”:]

“Reflections of '3.7': Towards 'Wholistic Self-Defense’”:

At birth we come... with knowledge of the Infinite... the earth... the air... the sun... confirm this knowledge... but we've come... to a world constructed for us... by lost children of Abandonment... 'hidden-power'... caused us to doubt... turn away from... let go... this knowledge... when they placed their weight upon us... turned us to their use...

But we... are ever-seeking... our root of truth... our power of the Infinite... our knowledge of our Oneness... and we turned to face these children of Abandonment... 'hidden-power'... but they eluded our eyes... struck on all sides... and we replied with questions... reached to feel its heart... tried to find its reason... and finally... its weakness...

Until at last... we looked back... and within... and communicated with our own strength... our deep knowledge of the Infinite... our deep reverence for the earth... our deep love for our Brothers and Sisters... And in that light... the hiding-lost children of Abandonment... dissolved.

[“160214needstoryofclass_8.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

“The Hidden Logic of Absurd Behavior”

...When we are confronted with adolescent heroin addicts who are ruining their lives, we are all too readily inclined to try to reach them with rational arguments or still worse, with efforts to “educate” them. In fact, many therapeutic groups work in this direction. They substitute one evil for another instead of trying to help these young people see what function addiction actually has in their lives and how they are unconsciously using it to communicate something to the outside world...

All absurd behavior has its roots in early childhood, but the cause will not be detected as long as the adult's manipulation of the child's psyche and physical needs is interpreted as an essential technique of child-rearing instead of as the cruelty it really is. Since most professionals themselves are not yet free from this mistaken belief [which is also an inability to 'see' the child... his inherent independence from us... the need for his or her autonomy to be respected... And let's pause here for a minute and recall what we learned from Proudhon...

...we reason by the eternal and absolute laws of our mind, and at the same time by the secondary rules, ordinarily faulty, which are suggested to us by imperfect observation [or one's parents perhaps?... faulty rules like: 'one must suppress spontaneous feelings...' or: 'parents are always right...' or: 'obedience to Authority is necessary to preserve safety and order... which are much more important (for the 'greater good'...) than 'happiness' or: 'we are here to be dutiful, obedient, and good – i.e.... to serve – not to be happy... – P.S.]. This is the most fecund source of false prejudices, and the permanent and often invincible cause of a multitude of errors. The bias resulting from these prejudices is so strong that often, even when we are fighting against a principle which our mind thinks false, which is repugnant to our reason, and which our conscience disapproves, we defend it without knowing it, we reason in accordance with it, and we obey it while attacking it. Enclosed within a circle, our mind revolves about itself, until a new observation, creating within us new ideas, brings to view an external ['external to the 'rationale'... the mindset... the 'logic'... of 'class'... – P.S.] principle which delivers us from the phantom by which our imagination is possessed. (Quoted in the December 27, 2015 show – page 50 above.)

...Proudhon's lesson will continue to have relevance... so long as 'power' holds sway over us... – P.S.] Since most professionals themselves are not yet free from this mistaken belief sometimes what is called therapy is only a continuation of early, unintended cruelty...

...To prevent absurd, self-destructive behavior from developing in adulthood, parents do not need extensive psychological training. They need only refrain from manipulating their child for their own needs, from abusing him by undermining his vegetative balance [his natural process of biological growth... – P.S.], and then the child will find the best defense against inappropriate demands in his own body. He will be familiar from the beginning with the language of his body and with his body signals. If parents are also able to give their child the same respect and tolerance they had for their own parents, they will surely be providing him with the best possible foundation for his entire later life. His self-esteem as well as the freedom to develop his innate abilities depend on this respect [but we must provide more than respect and tolerance to our children... we must simultaneously provide the truth – that 'hierarchy'... 'rank'... and training to obey Authority... are the principles on which 'the system' is premised – and help our children distinguish the truth of our inherent freedom from the omnipresent propaganda that comes from the 'class-system'... designed to hammer him or her into it... and thenceforth reproduce it... – P.S.]

["160214essentialtooutpower_9.mp3":]

"Concluding Comments"

It may strike the reader as very strange to see three such dissimilar life histories placed side by side (Christiane F., a drug addict; Adolf Hitler, Jurgen Bartsch, a child murderer). But it was because of this very dissimilarity that I selected and juxtaposed these figures, for, in spite of their differences, they share certain features common to many other people as well.

One. In all three cases we find extreme destructiveness. Christiane F. directed it against herself, Adolf Hitler against his real and imagined enemies, and Jurgen Bartsch against little boys, in whom he was repeatedly murdering himself while at the same time taking the lives of others.

Two. I interpret this destructiveness as the discharge of long-pent-up childhood hatred and its displacement onto other objects or onto the self. [And... it is having 'the right story' that allows us to move beyond 'hatred'... to 'rage'... to 'determination' to get beyond this sick system... – P.S.]

Three. As children, all three were severely mistreated and subjected to humiliation, not only in isolated instances but on a regular basis. From earliest childhood, they grew up in a climate of cruelty.

Four. The healthy, normal reaction to such treatment would be narcissistic rage of extreme intensity. But because of the authoritarian form of child-rearing practiced by all three families, this rage had to be sharply suppressed.

Five. In their entire childhood and youth, none of the three had an adult to whom they could confide their feelings, especially their feelings of hatred. (Christiane is an exception here insofar as she did meet two people during puberty to whom she could talk.)

Six. All three persons described here felt a strong urge to communicate their suffering to the world, to express themselves in some way. They all showed a special talent for verbal expression.

Seven. Since the path to safe, verbal communication based on a feeling of trust was blocked for them, the only way they were able to communicate with the world was by means of unconscious enactment.

Eight. Not until the end of the drama is reached do these enactments awaken in the world feelings of shock and horror. The public at large unfortunately does not experience such intense feelings upon hearing reports of battered children.

Nine. It lies in the nature of these people's repetition compulsion that they succeeded in winning undivided public attention with their enactments – enactments that ultimately led, however, to their own downfall. Similarly, a child who is beaten regularly also succeeds in winning attention, albeit in the baleful form of physical punishment.

Ten. All three received affection only as their parents' self-objects and property [transfer the focus of this statement to the primary condition imposed on we-the-common-folk (that is... the requirement that we 'serve'... perform...) and you have a concise and accurate understanding of the 'power'-guys... the global-state-statesmen... Plato's Tribe – and a clear summing-up of the global 'class'-system... if we make this minor adjustment: "we-who-do-the-work receive...whatever – whether attention or punishment... from the 'class'-system... only as the 'power'-guys' self-object and property..." i.e. only as an expression of 'power's needs or intentions... – P.S.], but never for their own sakes. The longing for affection, coupled with the eruption of destructive feelings from childhood, brought about their fateful enactments during puberty and adolescence. (In Hitler's case, these enactments filled an entire lifetime.)

The three people described here are not only individuals but also representatives of certain groups. We can better understand these groups (for example, drug addicts, delinquents, suicides, terrorists, or even a certain type of politician) if we trace the fate of an individual back to the concealed tragedy of his or her childhood. [And we're going to be thinking more about that 'power'- m.o. of 'secrecy' as part of their repetition compulsion... because 'secrecy' was so key to their experience of childhood... Everything about their tragedy has been concealed... – P.S.] The many and varied enactments of such people are essentially a crying out for understanding, but in a way that assures them of anything but society's sympathy. It is part of the

tragic nature of the repetition compulsion that someone who hopes eventually to find a better world than the one he or she experienced as a child in fact keeps creating instead the same undesired state of affairs.

When a person cannot talk about the cruelty endured as a child because it was experienced so early that it is beyond the reach of memory, then he or she must demonstrate cruelty. Christiane does this by self-destructiveness, the others by seeking out victims. For those who have children, these victims are automatically provided, and the demonstration can take place with impunity and without drawing public attention. But if one is childless, as in Hitler's case, the suppressed hatred may be vented upon millions of human beings, and the victims as well as the judges will confront such bestiality without an inkling as to its origins. Several decades have passed since Hitler conceived the idea of destroying human beings like vermin, and in the meantime the techniques required for such a project have certainly been perfected to the highest degree. Thus, it is all the more crucial for us to keep pace with this development by increasing our understanding of the sources of such intense and insatiable hatred as Hitler's. For, with all due respect for historical, sociological, and economic explanations, the official who turns on the gas to asphyxiate children and the person who conceived this are human beings and were once children themselves. Until the general public becomes aware that countless children are subjected to soul murder every day and that society as a whole must suffer as a result, we are groping in a dark labyrinth – in spite of all our well-meaning efforts to bring about disarmament among nations.

When I was planning the major portion of this book, I had no idea that it would lead me to questions concerning world peace. Originally, my sole concern was to inform parents of what I had learned about pedagogy in my twenty years of psychoanalytic practice. Because I did not want to write about my patients. I chose people who were already known to the public. Writing, however, resembles an adventure-filled journey whose destination is unknown at the outset. Therefore, if I have touched on matters of war and peace, it is only peripherally, for these matters far exceed my competence. But my study of Hitler's life, the psychoanalytic attempt to understand his later actions as an outgrowth of the degradation and humiliation he suffered as a child, was not without its consequences. It inevitably brought me to the topic of the search for peace. What emerged has its pessimistic as well as its optimistic implications.

I designate as pessimistic the thought that we are far more dependent than our pride would like to admit on individual human beings (and not only on institutions!), for a single person can gain control over the masses if he learns to use to his own advantage the system under which they were raised....

[Let's consider this for a moment... in the context of what we have learned by synthesizing and advancing our ancestors' gifts (including... as one of the most critical... Alice herself...): in that light... there's no doubt that Alice is right that in the decades "since Hitler conceived the idea of destroying human beings like vermin... the techniques required for such a project have certainly been perfected to the highest degree..." no doubt right that 'peace movements' are completely inadequate for achieving their stated purpose... if they ignore Alice... and right as well to point out that there are *individuals* who are doing the mischief... but to achieve our clearest picture of the truth of what has been happening to us under 'class' (and we need an *accurate* understanding... the fullest possible picture... in order to develop our thought-process... and become advocates for freeing global humanity from the strangle-hold of 'power'...) we have had to "see from the vantage of the whole" – and this in every sense: geographically... historically... as well as socio-politically – we have needed all the scholars that are... in a sense... circumnavigating our problem of how to get free of 'power'... though they may use other language and incorporate other themes...

...we have needed all of them: Karl Popper... Jeremy Bentham... Karl Marx... Diana Spearman... Peter Kropotkin... Alice Miller... Sebastian de Grazia... John Boswell... Martin Bernal... Alfred O. Hirschman... Miklos Nyiszli... Terence K. Hopkins... Giovanni Arrighi... Immanuel Wallerstein... Pierre-Joseph Proudhon...and others as well... like Claudia von Werlhof – and they bringing so many others into our analysis...

...we have needed to circle around the acts of 'power'... and see with many eyes... see through many accumulated years of experience and knowledge... to achieve our needed insight: that it is absolutely essential... for our achieving our freedom... to out hidden-'power'... those Tiny Few who long to be viewed as gods...

All to say: Hitler did not 'happen' by accident... in a vacuum... he was supported by a global-system of 'power'... those ten thousand guys who want to be gods... the very system which we are now about to de-commission... – P.S.]

[The February 14, 2016 show ends here.]

["160221earthstopsmicrowaves_1.mp3":]

The February 21, 2016 show – themes and things: “All the elements of 'power's control of us hinge on its continuously re-created falseness...” and... “War is always war on us... whether they blow us up with guns or markets... or with hidden weaponry used clandestinely...” and... “The importance of 'the right story' within a wholistic 'Self-defense practice: first steps toward forming ourselves into 'a people' demanding the right to pursue happiness... both as 'a people'... and as fully developing individualities...” and... “Seeing reality: using our full gifts puts us at risk...” and... as always...: “what more can we do to ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 15... pages 99 –106)

[Update on wrist: it's now wearing a much better splint... and surgery is out of the question... because it's already starting to mend – I'll continue on to an osteopath to find out more about the swelling in the hand... and to get a cast... but any weakness... deformity or pain... I must live with – i.e. this is nothing compared to assault-by-EMF... 24 – 7 – and... on this subject... there has to be a better way than enclosing a space with half-inch chicken wire and grounding the cage... or... if it's true that earth stops microwaves... excavating and building an Earthship (though I'd love to do this...) to protect from EMF... and 'out' the use of it...]

February 16, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: Let's consider in more depth the implications of a plan – by that very small... very organized group of 'global-state-statesmen' – to literally re-'design' 'the human' to be more obedient... easier to 'govern'...

["160221powergivesobjectsforrage_2.mp3":]

...to design humans who will be 'content' with staying 'small'... 'content' to only do what they're told... 'content' to fulfill narrow roles assigned to them by the 'value-assigning' mechanism of the 'power'-guys: their global-market...

And because they stay hidden... hide behind numerous buffers: 'the economy'... 'the education system'... – which likewise 'value-assigns' – both mechanisms providing the hiding 'shadow-statesmen' – or... more immediately... their vetted university 'team-players' – with ample 'objective' evidence... with which to argue for the need... or 'scientific'-basis... for... hierarchy... rank... 'class'...

(...to argue for the need... essentially... for themselves – the shepherds and their sheepdogs – which obviously requires a lot of supplementary (false) 'justification'... as its fabrication...)

...and because they stay hidden behind numerous buffers... our suppressed rage from being 'raised' with our parents' eyes ever on our 'performance' – our unconscious rage from being treated like trick-ponies... who must impress or be pastured on scrub... or as scrub...

(...but our fury is also... as the Hitler quote [cited in last week's show...] suggests... at being misled... as one of our three 'keys' to vitality... is our 'intelligence'... over the millennia we've taken great pride in it... and in the centuries of 'class' this has served 'power' ideologically... as the alleged sphere on which 'rank' turns... and certainly as a determinant of 'free' status... and [the threat of low 'placement'...] as pressure to extract performance – i.e.... this is an intentional duplicity that continuously re-seeds our fury... albeit unconsciously...)

...our suppressed rage is continuously mis-directed onto substitute objects... the functionaries – our parents... teachers... fellow-travelers in the coerced-work system – who unconsciously (or in some instances consciously...) represent for (implement the plans of...) those ten thousand 'global-state-statesmen'...

...and misdirected as well onto certain designated 'others' (especially designed for every designed-'group'... by the 'power-guys' and their functionaries...) those 'others' among us given to us as designer-objects for our rage: the police... other 'racial' / gender / sexual-identity / ethnic / age / profession / religious categories (we could on like this for some time... they have been very busy... have these 'power'-guys... with their always-essential [to their continued existence...] special-project of 'keep-them-divided'...)

...all of this has mis-directed our awareness of unfairness (safely) away from the 'power'-guys... and to each other...

["160221scaliadeathsuggestive_3.mp3":]

And... notice... with each false step we make in our attempts to discover what's true... we add to the falseness... the false picture we're given... and to our unconscious fury... and the general confusion... which thickens our chains... strengthens our cage... bolsters 'power's illusion...

So the false 'reality' we're given serves many purposes for 'power': it sets us up to 'self-contain'...

...it allows 'power' to discharge its hate... as its construction is also its unconscious reenactment of its early childhood experience of abuse... abandonment... and betrayal...

...and its construction is a prison – a physical... spiritual... and mental containment of 'its' subject populations – us – all aspects of us... we-commoners: our minds... bodies... and spirits: it strips our mind of its thought-process... strips our body of its earth-root... strips our spirit of its empathy...

...and its construction is 'power's strategy for smashing our wholeness continuously – all aspects of us: our minds... bodies... and spirits – via its social institutions... which... in being self-reflective... cements in place the totalitarian structure which is the physical manifestation of its hate... its being stripped of feeling...

All the elements of 'power's control of us hinge on this falseness... and so necessarily then... all the elements for achieving our freedom hinge... on our clear vision... our accurate analysis... our incisive 'seeing'... and solid possession... of the true story... the authentic explanation... of the 'reality' we see around us... and the 'facts' we are given... so we can design effective strategies... successful practices... and inspire by them... others to join with us...

(...for instance... once we clearly get that the point of 'the system' is to dispose of or use our human energy as 'it' sees fit – to 'manage' us as a resource called 'service'... we get that their sole obsession is making us obedient – 'governable'... so they can 'realize their purpose' and create 'the Republic' [we've been trained to think Fascism has nothing to do with this project... that these guys went away with Nazism...] and then we get that there is conscious planning behind events... that “the result is the intention...” so when U.S. tax dollars to support Afghan troops against the Taliban...

[...and this could easily be made into a game of 'state-corruption' 'Mad-libs'... because the single idea “winnow your population” takes a disheartening number of forms... all over the world... such that... a handful of 'winner-states' are allowed to represent for the qualities we're conditioned to think constitute 'progress'... and 'civilization' (as they *quietly* winnow their population...) while the rest are used to help silence the dissent of 'the winners'...]

...so when U.S. tax dollars to other militaries and police (in the so-called 'periphery'... and beyond...) disappear into that vast sink “state corruption...” we read this as an illustration of the phrase: “war is always war on us... whether they blow us up with guns or markets...” and now we can add: “or with hidden weaponry used clandestinely...” – and... by the way... does it not display the most utter and crass contempt for us...

[...as if we don't know they have 'rail-guns' that take out ships... or that they peddle EMF weapons at police events... – and wouldn't you think the possibility of EMF weapons would be automatically eliminated – signs of swelling from mucus-generation in the face... head... chest... and legs... and whatever chemical test of body fluids that's definitive – in the case of a Supreme Court Justice?]

...that this could be written about the investigation into the death of Antonin Scalia... that: “there were no signs of foul play...” so obviously he had “died of natural causes...” [concluded the judge who decided 'no autopsy'...]? You see how easy it is for them to wipe out *anybody*... even a Supreme Court Justice... if they so choose – they just need 'plausible deniability' [which they have with 'HAE' – discussed in our January 17, 2016 show – which stands for “hereditary angio (heart) edema”: “abnormal accumulation of fluid in the tissue spaces, cavities or joint capsules of the body...” – for EMF-related deaths'... that is... if you ignore other symptoms like 'ear-ringing' and that electrical paralysis that seizes the muscles... and given a 'sympathetic' doctor...] Advanced age... of course... is automatic plausible deniability for EMF-related deaths. If you're over 79... you're overdue for a visit from the 'death-men'... Plato's Tribesmen... a prime candidate for the meat-wagon... in these guys' eyes... And why... in any specific instance of their 'sculpting' process?... When there's no repercussions... it don't take much. In this instance... it could be he was sympathetic to our right to pursue happiness... which we were just discussing in

the show previous... along with the censoring of Sebastian de Grazia. Everything about this 'system of lies and fraud' is wrong... it's not a thing we want any part of...)

[“160221needtherightstory_4.mp3”:]

...Once we believe enough in our inherent right to be happy – and that happiness requires “our own things” – self-creation – we are thereby impelled to design the strategies and practices that gain for us this freedom... practices by which we reclaim our empathy in connecting authentically with our Brothers and Sisters... reclaim our love of the earth-in-us in reconnecting with our bodies... and reclaim our thought-process in giving thanks for the ancestors who want freedom and vitality (wholeness...) for us...

In a context in which nothing is true... authentic... we can't grow our gifts... which we're here to do... we can't get 'big'... as our bodies... our minds... and our spirits... want to...

...so our being taken by the hand... and systematically misled... put us on a crooked path that... without our true map – the right story – could forever keep us trapped... no matter our good hearts and spirits and minds...

...without a clear and comprehensive understanding of what is being done to us and why...

...we are paddling rudderless... and flying blind...

...we absolutely need... the right story... to get free...

[“160221falsenessmakesmallness_5.mp3”:]

What we've been up against... without knowing it... for two centuries and more... is a very organized... systematized... plan to keep us small... to prevent our fully using our gifts... under our own direction (and that's the view into this obsession most important for us to consider... I think... given our objective of making the trauma of 'class' something we experience consciously... and partly because of this issue of needing to perceive the unfairness of it in order to be prepared to do something about it...

The organized plan to keep us small has enormous repercussions throughout our lives.

...and when some... despite the enormous suppression... start to use their gifts under their own direction anyway... it is noted and relayed... via their hidden functionaries. Now this degree of scrutiny and surveillance and data-gathering for subsequent action sounds extreme... until we fully take in what it means... for a Miniscule percentage (.0001 percent) of the global population... to order about seven billion... particularly when doing so defies reason (and particularly when we have instantaneous communication...) displays utter contempt for what the earth needs... and spits in the face of the health-priorities of all life...

...we haven't discussed yet... the full implications... of the Tiny Ten Thousand sitting on the full energy of seven billion – it's difficult to plumb the depths of such darkness...

...that this is untenable is obvious... our precipitously worsening life-conditions and social circumstances do not surprise us... though they seem to have temporarily numbed us...

But we are waking up... waking up to the fact that we need only stand up... to shake off this massive threat to all life... all hope for human happiness... all chance for humanity to reach its inherent greatness...

To get 'our own' back: our earth... our full gifts... our Brothers and Sisters... we have to grow – with the conscious intent of expansion into power – all three 'phases' – our bodies... our minds... and our spirits...

...and for all of it – expansion of mind... of body... and of spirit... we need what's true... we need the authentic...

It is time to discuss what they do – these 'power-'guys – when we decide to take our own back... and embark on this 'conscious expansion' project...

...so we can prepare for it... and provide to each other the love and support that demonstrate... to our watching Brothers and Sisters... our coming future...

...we must face what they do when we turn away from them... and to... the truth: that we are made to be 'big'... here to grow our gifts... to do which requires... that we re-conceive our allegiance...

...what they do... is to snuff us out one-by-one... with hidden weapons... systematically pick us off... one by one... and then crow to themselves at their supposed 'superior intelligence'...

...if we let them pick off those who... one-by-one (and this alone exposes the tactic: the fact that we haven't been able to grow the numbers of folk who see clearly... that our gifts are not meant for markets or rating systems...) see through the illusion... we're done... 'humanity' will 'become' 'obedient'...

...so we have to nullify that tactic...

—

[“160221madetobebig_6.mp3”:]

Getting 'big'... expansion into our full selves... regaining our original vitality... is about reconnecting... essentially... with what was lost... which requires 'overcoming' (facing...) systematically-sown fears...

We will be thinking through together how to do this specifically... but... speaking generally... being 'small' is about being *made* 'small' (by 'the state'...) by means of fear (fear as the Great Manipulator):

...reconnecting with our authentic thought process... means facing our fear of 'the state' (that which thwarted it... when we were infants...)

...and reconnecting with our bodies... means facing our fear of 'the unknown'... of mystery... of the vast immensity of the universe... of vulnerability... of our seeming fragility... of evanescence in flow with permanence...

...we've been so conditioned to believe that we must control... everything... and earth ain't that way... and we are earth...

...and reconnecting with our spirit... our Brothers and Sisters... means facing our (inculcated...) fear of each other...

Our discussion... in our last show... of the process of reclaiming our wholeness... my noticing that it seemed to me that my life... ultimately... came to be about doing this... and then... looking back... at this year just passed... I am reminded of the need for humility... asked to ever-appreciate mystery... as... whatever I 'thought' I was doing... a year ago... mystery took hold...

...love walked in... and then Coleen... and I began to see... the possibility... that though the ancestors provided the theory of wholism... and I could see its truth in my own life... I had a long way to go... towards actually *living* by it...

...and further still... to a model that could be practically applied... to the actual... and global at that... threat facing us.

When Alice writes:

Everyone must find his own form of aggressiveness in order to avoid letting himself be made into an obedient puppet manipulated by others. [It strikes me that this is the central content of the “wholistic self-defense” we are developing... – P.S.] Only if we do not allow ourselves to be reduced to the instrument of another person's will can we fulfill our personal needs and defend our legitimate rights...

...she's telling us to fight back... resist. It is time to do this as a clear... conscious... project... in defense of ourselves... our Brothers and Sisters... and uncoerced humanity itself.

It is our anger at being misled that gives us something to defend: the truth... 'the right story': that we are here to grow our gifts... that we are made to be 'big'... and that we are made to defend each other... mutual aid... good fellowship...

[“160221coverupofabuse_7.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

“Concluding Comments” (continued)

...People who have been “pedagogically” manipulated as children are not aware as adults of all that can be done to them. Like the individual authoritarian father, leader figures, in whom the masses see their own father, actually embody the avenging child who needs the masses for his own purposes (of revenge). And this second form of dependence – the dependence of the “great leader” on his childhood, on the unpredictable nature of the unintegrated, enormous potential for hatred within him – is decidedly a very great danger.

The optimistic aspects of my investigations must not be overlooked, however. In all I have read in recent years about the childhood of criminals, even of mass murderers, I have been unable to find anywhere the beast, the evil child whom pedagogues believe they must educate to be “good.” Everywhere I find defenseless children who were mistreated in the name of child-rearing, and often for the sake of the highest ideals. My optimism is based on the hope that public opinion will no longer tolerate the cover-up of child abuse [and with our broad lens... we see that unless we get 'power' off our backs... this needed shift in 'public opinion' cannot happen... – P.S.] in the name of child-rearing, once it has been recognized that:

One. Child-rearing is basically directed not toward the *child's* welfare, but toward satisfying the parents' needs for power and revenge.

Two. Not only the individual child is affected; we can all become future victims of this mistreatment.

[“160221freedombreakscycle_8.mp3”:]

“Unintentional Cruelty Hurts, Too”

When we examine the child-rearing literature of the past two hundred years, we discover the methods that have systematically ['systematically'... being the operative word... as... the past two hundred years is precisely the time of... the birth... the coming into full malevolence... and hopefully (we see the clear signs of) the demise... of Plato's Tribe... – P.S.] systematically been used to make it impossible for children to realize and later to remember the way they were actually treated by their parents. Why are the old methods of child raising still so widely employed today? This is a mystery I have tried to understand and explain from the perspective of the compulsive repetition of the exercise of power [which alone is insufficient to explain the mystery... Rather... the explanation lies in the conscious intention of *hidden*-'power'... the 'power'-guys... the global-state-statesmen... who systematically reproduce it as critical to the realization of their objectives... and who systematically aggregate means to accomplish them (and on this tip... I've posted a song “Economic hardship rolls in fascism...” to the 'Blog' and 'audio-files' pages... to express this – 'class'-age-old – strategy of putting us in that survival-choke to hold our attention... enforce our obedience...)]. But nonetheless... we can see that she could not be more correct... we have been witnessing... and are enmeshed in... for millennia... the compulsive repetition of their exercise of 'power'... And as to breaking that cycle... it falls on us... we who see their dilemma... and how they made it ours... to step up... and be the emphatic partner... that takes the lead on realizing our inherent freedom... – P.S.]. Contrary to popular opinion, the injustice, humiliation, mistreatment, and coercion a person has experienced are not without consequences. The tragedy is that the effects of mistreatment are transmitted to new and innocent victims, even though the victims themselves do not remember the mistreatment on a conscious level.

How can this vicious circle be broken? Religion says we must forgive the injustice we suffered, only then will we be free to love and be purged of hatred. This is correct as far as it goes, but how do we find the path to true forgiveness? [It seems to me this question doesn't really flow from her analysis... which is otherwise based on a critically important slice of the historical record... But in those missing slices – integrated into her analysis... the result being the pie – lies the solution... to the problem of Plato's Tribe... Because the issue is not 'forgiveness'... but freedom... In our January 17, 2016 show we said that “our experience of 'class' is itself a trauma that needs to be experienced consciously... and integrated into our personalities... such that we can become 'fully-developing individualities'... as opposed to manifestations of 'power's priorities...” 'Forgiveness' is beside the point... once we are in possession of 'the right story'... the point is freedom from coercion of all kinds... and organizing to achieve it... on behalf of all humanity... Although... since I wrote that... I'm not so sure... I'm sitting here looking at Afghan soldiers... being set up... about to be sent off to slaughter... Syria... its rich ancient society... its people... so kind and generous... being heartlessly destroyed – or that's the attempt – displaced families forced into tents... violence and disease systematically sown across the globe... police states... hidden schemes and tyranny... the fare for good-hearted people everywhere... and here in the U.S... the reward for a lifetime of self-less labor... premature death from 'High-tech Auschwitz'... But of this at least I am convinced: we cannot stop to ponder it – this question of 'forgiveness' – until we have our freedom... – And in this comment I am of course talking about those ten thousand guys... not we duped... unconscious functionaries – the parents that took us by the hand and led us into slavery... – some simply because they had no alternative... – it is essential that we now provide that alternative... that alternative global society... – P.S.]

[“160221wearempathicpartner_9.mp3”:]

...Can we speak of forgiveness if we hardly know what was actually done to us and why? And that is the situation we all found ourselves in as children. We could not grasp why we were being humiliated, brushed aside, intimidated, laughed at, treated like an object, played with like a doll or brutally beaten (or both). What is more, we were not even allowed to be aware that all this was happening to us, for any mistreatment was held up to us as being necessary for our own good. Even the most clever child cannot see through such a lie if it comes from the mouths of his beloved parents [and if... as Bentham said... the lie is confirmed on all sides... This is key... – P.S.], who after all show him other, loving sides as well. He has to believe that the way he is being treated is truly right and good for him, and he will not hold it against his parents. But then as an adult he will act the same way toward his own children in an attempt to prove to himself that his parents behaved correctly toward him.

Isn't this what most religions mean by “forgiveness”: to chastise children “lovingly” in the tradition of the fathers and to raise them to respect their parents? But forgiveness which is based on denial of the truth and which uses a defenseless child as an outlet for resentment is not true forgiveness; that is why hatred is not vanquished by religions in this manner, but, on the contrary, is unwittingly exacerbated. The child's intense anger at the parents, being strictly forbidden, is simply deflected onto other people and onto himself, but not done away with. Instead, because it is permissible to discharge this anger onto one's own children [and... as Rousseau explained... and the Plato's Tribesmen show us every day... this anger is discharged onto dependent subjects of the global-state... – P.S.], it spreads over the entire world like a plague. For this reason we should not be surprised that there are religious wars, although such a phenomenon should actually be a contradiction in terms.

Genuine forgiveness does not deny anger but faces it head-on. If I can feel outrage at the injustice I have suffered, can recognize my persecution as such, and can acknowledge and hate my persecutor for what he or she has done, only then will the way to forgiveness be open to me. [What this suggests for us... looking at multiple levels and manifestations of a single injustice: “the 'class' system”... which... being totalitarian... enmeshes us all in it – 'betrayal' being one of its signature qualities – is that the concept of the 'state-in-us'... i.e. placing what happened to us in 'the right context' (our gaining the light of truth...) – may provide the path through this tangle... as we all participate in... and reproduce it... this injustice. This abusiveness is something we all (under 'class') now do to each other: we stage our small dramas while 'power' stages its big one – telling itself it is the 'god in the machine' (*deus ex machina*...) the 'power'-guys as a plot device inserted into our lives... in the staging of which they reveal their compulsions and deepest wish: to be perceived as gods and saviors of us... and so... justifiably worshipped... and not a malevolent force that destroys those who refuse its crafted falseness... and choose to honor instead authentic allegiances... But once we see the reality behind the staging... the magnitude of the wrong dwarfs all particular dramas (“affairs are now soul-size...”) – and by 'seeing reality' I mean *seeing them*... the global-state-statesmen... Plato's Tribesmen... seeing their dilemma... their repetition compulsion... and seeing as well... that we have become them... that we likewise have been infected with this trauma of 'class'. And while *they* cannot face their compulsions... while they have no authentic power-sources... this is not true of us... we have the continuous support of the ancestors... the earth... and our Brothers and Sisters... i.e.... we have the truth... and *we can*... face them... 'Seeing reality' means seeing that only by our being the emphatic partner can we end this cycle of repetition... – P.S.]

[“160221liberatedfromhate_10.mp3”]:

...Only if the history of abuse in earliest childhood can be uncovered will the repressed anger, rage, and hatred cease to be perpetuated. Instead, they will be transformed into sorrow and pain at the fact that things had to be that way. As a result of this pain, they will give way to genuine understanding, the understanding of an adult who now has gained insight into his or her parents' childhood and finally, liberated from his own hatred, can experience genuine, mature sympathy. Such forgiveness cannot be coerced by rules and commandments; it is experienced as a form of grace and appears spontaneously when a repressed (because forbidden) hatred no longer poisons the soul. The sun does not need to be told to shine. When the clouds part, it simply shines. But it would be a mistake to say that the clouds are not in the way if they are indeed there.

If an adult has been fortunate enough to get back to the sources of the specific injustice he suffered in his childhood and experience it on a conscious level, then in time he will realize on his own – preferably without the aid of any pedagogical or religious exhortations – that in most cases his parents did not torment or abuse him for their own pleasure or out of sheer strength and vitality but because they could not help it, since they were once victims themselves and thus believed in traditional methods of child-rearing.

[“160221mourningsetsusfree_11.mp3”:]

It is very difficult for people to believe the simple fact that *every persecutor was once a victim*. Yet it should be very obvious that someone who was allowed to feel free and strong from childhood does not have the need to humiliate another person. In Paul Klee's Diaries we find the following anecdote:

From time to time, I played tricks on a little girl who was not pretty and who wore braces to correct her crooked legs. I regarded her whole family, and in particular the mother, as very inferior people. I would present myself at the high court, pretending to be a good boy, and beg to be allowed to take the little darling for a walk. For a while we'd walk peaceably hand in hand, then, perhaps in the nearby field where potato plants were blooming and June bugs were all over, or perhaps even sooner, we would start walking single file. At the right moment I'd give my protegee a slight push. The poor thing would fall, and I'd bring her back in tears to her mother, explaining with an innocent air: “She fell down.” I played this trick more than once, without Frau Enger's ever suspecting the truth. I must have gauged her correctly. (Age five or six)

No doubt little Paul was repeating something here that was done to him, probably by his father. There is only one brief passage about his father in the Diaries:

For a long time I trusted my papa implicitly and regarded his words (Papa can do anything) as gospel. The only thing I couldn't bear was his teasing. On one occasion, thinking I was alone, I was playing make-believe. I was interrupted by a sudden amused “hmpf!” which hurt my feelings. It was not the only time I was to hear this “hmpf!”

Mockery from a beloved and admired person is always painful, and we can imagine that little Paul was deeply wounded by this treatment.

It would be wrong to say that, because we understand its origins, the harm we compulsively inflict on another person does not cause harm and that little Paul did not hurt the girl. To recognize this makes the tragedy visible but at the same time offers the possibility for change. The realization that even with the best will in the world we are not omnipotent, that we are subject to compulsions [under 'class'... – P.S.], and that we cannot love our child in the way we would like may lead to sorrow but should not awaken guilt feelings, because the latter imply a power and freedom we do not have. Burdened by guilt feelings ourselves, we will also burden our children with guilt feelings and tie them to us for a lifetime. By means of our mourning we can set our children free.

[The February 21, 2016 show ends here.]

["160228parentalriskforemf_1.mp3":]

The February 28, 2016 show – themes and things: “Outing hidden-‘power’: addressing ‘power’s use of hidden weaponry...” and... “Continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance – a holistic ‘Self-defense practice... for forming ourselves into ‘a people’ (as fully-developing-individualities...) that believes in our right to happiness... must do – our effective model must: start with ‘the right story’... let the body speak... address all the weapons and tactics stacked against it...” and... “Seeing reality: ‘love rules’ our need to be strategic as well as the principle of utility we apply in our work...” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 16... pages 106 – 112)

February 24, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: How do we build numbers... in the face of a ‘power’-response that is hidden... and therefore invisible? I asked this question... essentially... during our September 27, 2015 show:

["150927coleencouragecreativity.mp3":]

“And I definitely can testify [that we all carry within us the potential... to ‘be it’... *be*... that inherent freedom...] and... as I said... Coleen’s been very ‘up’ for me... and with a lot of grief that I was ‘asleep’ when I had the chance to know her... because... those of us who are ‘seeing reality’... we need the support of each other... particularly once we’re targeted... because it is very... very difficult confronting the ‘hidden-ness’ of these people who operate behind scenes... it’s very difficult to grapple with something that hides itself... that’s why we’ve been focusing so much in recent shows on this notion of ‘outing’ hidden ‘power’ (it sort of explains why they love these EMF weapons... they’re a perfect complement to their overall tactic... the hidden-ness of the assault is pretty insidious – and the word ‘bully’ for these folk don’t even begin to touch it... and I have the sense that they think of themselves as ‘warriors’... because of their attachment to Plato’s ideologies and ‘propaganda playbook’... and his advice to them... And the notion that you can... rig the rules of a game and celebrate yourself for winning... is just so bizarre to me... that you can beat up on folk when they have no means of fighting back... have no means of *seeing* the weaponry that you’re using... is beyond ‘cowardly’... we have no words for that...” (From the September 27, 2015 *Waking Up Radio* show.)

(But to call it ‘cowardly’ feels dismissive of Alice... who labored long to bring her insights to us... Rather... they are stuck... in their repetition compulsion...)

Bear with me please... as we begin thinking this through.

If you are in a high-risk group... for getting targeted with EMF-weapons [and... by the way... I read recently that sixty percent of all people in the U.S. had personal financial... health... or both... data stolen electronically in 2015... put those two things together and you get a cash cow for the ‘health care’ industry... which these ‘power’-guys have invested in heavily... FYI...] – and this includes anyone who advocates (fill in the blank with any of what follows:) global resistance to global-‘power’... staying clear that the primary problem holding back our freedom is hidden-‘power’ and its installation of a global ‘class’-system – *not* ‘capitalism’... re-conceiving our allegiance by reconnecting with authentic-power: the ancestors, the earth, and each other (our Brothers and Sisters)... anti-pedagogy: letting children be powerful... overcoming atomization by meeting publicly and regularly to develop ‘the ‘people’s own independent media for carrying on discussions that return to our awareness suppressed ancestors who help us define ‘freedom’ and understand “the story of ‘class’...” and the de-centralized... non-hierarchical global social arrangement that is our future freedom... organizing a multiplicity of forums to discuss the people’s right to happiness here in the U.S.... the absolutely essential need for us... to achieve our freedom... to organize regular Global General Strikes... mutual aid (love and good fellowship) as a political strategy for overcoming false divisions and achieving global unity... basing our future on fully-developing individualities and in “the interdependence of all possible associations formed for definite ends, embracing in their federations the whole of society...” (Kropotkin)

...also at risk: older folks... especially in nursing homes [unless... I suppose... they’re wiping out family income by being there...] those without means or living on the street... or in a ‘category’ that clashes with ‘power’s ‘vision’ of the ‘Republic’: low-income White folks... loving Black folks... anyone who truly loves... cherishes... and respects children... particularly if they work with them [for the global-state-statesmen are very much believers in claiming the future... that means our children...]

...but there’s another high risk group we must not overlook: the parents of the children indoctrinated to believe in the ‘necessary’ ‘rule’ of ‘philosopher-kings’... trained to become ‘Plato’s Tribesmen’... imbued with a fantastical mission to force all the people on the planet to accept narrow roles and concepts – and early deaths when deemed redundant – children that the

'global-state-statesmen' have trained (via their intermediaries...) as functionaries... troops... to obey as reliably as the simplest machine – no matter this does violence to their full possibilities as human beings...

...once this parental role is done... the parents are no longer needed and become superfluous... or... worse yet... they could experience 'soul-growth' and become a critical influence for their children... compromising years of 'power'-investment in the creation of these human 'assets'... for them... and so then... worse still... turn into liabilities... as their knowledge of 'the mission'... if spoken about openly... could put it at risk... and if they caused their children to 'flip'... 'waste' them as 'power'-operatives...

...if you are in any of these 'high-risk-categories'... or know someone who is... and you begin to notice that their face is swollen... you may want to tell them this...

(...what follows reflects the effects of the current 'wave'-assault I'm experiencing... that results in a lot of very difficult-to-clear mucus – but please also revisit the March 15, 2015 show [I've posted the most relevant excerpt to the audio-files pages...] where we first addressed the *evolution* of the symptoms of an EMF-assault... [which may also reflect a variety of 'power's 'wave'-weapons...]:

["150315lovewilltriumph_1.mp3":]

“...so it took me years to put two and two together... and I'm sharing this symptomology because I don't believe that anyone has done that... has been able to put these things together in this way because they have not had that advantage of seeing the pattern... and seeing it... trail you about [referring to my using my car to sleep in to... as I at first thought... escape the EMF fields...]: the 'evolution' of my physical responses to the various forms of electromagnetic bombardment to which I've been treated since publishing *Waking Up*... beginning with that 'all-body-pain' – at times I felt I could barely walk – which provided so much medical diversion for the better part of two years... and then the nausea... ear-ringing... joint-pain... a sense of pressure in my head and chest... head pain... occasional itchiness and skin rashes... eruptions... and burning... culminating in my present project of 'clearing mucus'.” (From the March 15, 2015 *Waking Up Radio* show.)

["160228outinghiddenemf_2.mp3":]

...and what's also not expressed in what follows is the importance of mobility [sleep is a big problem...] and the patience required [because the whole time I'm 'sending energy' and loosening... I'm doing a Liangong 'walking' exercise... as... the whole time I'm being targeted (there is a book on Liangong by Wen-Mei Yu that Kate gave me... she uses these healing exercises in her class)] and the pain that must be borne... because the mucus – at least for me experiencing increasing severity of assault – the mucus is so impacted it requires about three hours to reduce it sufficiently to allow me to do other things... and then only after there is an intense burning pain in the head... throat... cheeks... and ears... after which follow streams of very viscous mucus... Here again we discover yet more 'hiddenness' in the tactic... as the injury (the pain) is hidden by the mucus... and what you experience is a sense of 'swollen-ness'... pressure... in the head and chest... which you might not automatically associate with mucus – and then off you go to a doctor who either innocently misdiagnoses or is bought... either way... the mucus-build-up... the balance problems... the stiffening of the muscles... would only get worse...):

["160228ifyoususpectemf_3.mp3":]

...whether you're targeted or not... keep garlic in stock...
...always 'send energy'... by rubbing together your palms... and placing your fingertips on... swollen spots...
...remember to eat cilantro... kale and parsley... raw... drink hot tea that also de-toxes...
...and eat spicy things that are naturally hot: cayenne... ginger... and red onions...
...massage in cocoanut oil all over your body to help address the effects of the radiation on your skin...

Listen carefully to what your body says... as it is the most exquisite of instruments...

These 'power'-guys love to use our bodies against us – as they generate a lot of mucus to protect the organs... and toxic levels of iron in the blood... in response to the EMF-bombardment... and the mucus-flood in the head and chest... can lead to heart disease... alzheimer's... pneumonia... stroke... and death...

So the mucus must be cleared on a regular basis... by gagging yourself under a warm-water-flow to get it out... and coughing can help loosen it if its particularly thick... because it's essential that it be ejected... and your body can't do it without your help...

And... most important: remember preserving yourself for our resistance could not be more important – try not to give in to stress or depression... this would only be doing the 'power'-guys 'work' for them.

[“160228ourloveandpowertofreedom_4.mp3”:]

(All 'power' requires is a 'sympathetic' doctor in its pocket... and we can be diagnosed with almost anything... And... as we've said... 'power' loves to 'prove' we are deserving of mistreatment... by demonstrating to its minions how easily we are duped... 'Power's general m.o. is 'contempt'... because that is how they were treated as infants.)

In our August 9, 2015 show we recalled the very insightful and prescient words of Gustav Landauer... who defined as the task of the socialists and their movement: “to loosen the hardening of hearts so that what lies buried may rise to the surface: so that what truly lives yet now seems dead may emerge and grow light.” We recalled them also in our July 28, 2013 show (included in the pdf you can download free: “*Reclaiming Our Leadership: Waking Up Radio Conversations* (Vol. 1)”)

As the route to our common freedom lies through unity... it's been noted by many ancestors who want this for us that this means...that our route must lie through mutual caring and empathy... as Gustav Landauer told us... as Christopher Fry told us... as Alice Miller told us... our route must lead to tenderness... We said: “What else but this could our future be... if its opposed to the frozen misery of centuries... And, yes, it's in us... of course it's in us... is us... this 'state' we manufacture fresh every day simply by not consciously renouncing it... and turning to our (always present) tenderness. It's there for us the second we stop jumping on our leashes.”

[“130728tendernessfor.mp3”:]

“What mistaken notions must there be to imagine that a state will change its ways because we wag a finger at it?... or that we-the-'workforce' could be moved to join a project that means but a change in management? What did Emily say? “to fill a gap, insert the Thing that caused it... Well... the 'gap' to fill between our hanging back and our being moved to act... is but our stolen lives returned... it's that for which we yearn... the missing love and power... took. So what would the authentic conversations about 'race... about 'socialism' be?... the ones that do lead to a true road?... They would... as Gustav Landauer told us... [Gustav Landauer] defined as the task of the socialists and their movement: “to loosen the hardening of hearts so that what lies buried may rise to the surface: so that what truly lives yet now seems dead may emerge and grow light.” (quoted in Erich Fromm's *The Sane Society*...) as Christopher Fry told us... as Alice Miller told us... as all the ancestors who see that we must be the opposite of what we have been made to be... under 'class'... have said... ..they must lead to tenderness. What else but this could our future be... if its opposed to the frozen misery of centuries... breaking... now... finally... at long last. And, yes, it's in us... of course it's in us... is us... this 'state' we manufacture fresh every day simply by not consciously renouncing it... and turning to our (always present) tenderness. It's there for us the second we stop jumping on our leashes.” (From the July 28, 2013 *Waking Up Radio* show.)

Revisiting those words has reminded me that... while we're focusing right now on the implications... politically... of our missing empathy... we come here (as infants... as babies... to the planet...) expecting to see around us what we are: love and power... that these in combination produce the empathy we need to reclaim our freedom... these elements that went missing... when force robbed us of speech and understanding...

...and these words have also reminded me that we commoners know from... know our way around some... hard work... and that we'll go through a lot... if the result is freedom.

[“160228invisibleinjuriesofclass_5.mp3”:]

When my son was five... I took him to Hand To Hand Martial Arts Training Center to attend a 'self-defense' class for children. One of the exercises required the children to wait in line for their turn to run up to a punching bag lying on the floor... and stomp on it. When my son got to the bag he burst into tears.

Recently I recalled this story to Martial Artist Kate... and she said: "I know... the children don't like to think that there is anybody who would want to hurt them..." This stunned me... because I was forced to see... that I had been completely unconnected to his feelings... because that hadn't occurred to me.

This was not an isolated instance. I could tell you many stories like this... when I was completely insensitive to what was going on with him... or displayed an affect completely flat to something that affected him deeply...

These were injuries to him that I never acknowledged as such... injuries that invalidated his experience... that made him feel invisible... and unloved... and furious – all unconscious...

And Alice has helped me see this disease (now... after the fact of it...) of absence of empathy... and how I infected my son with it...

Every 'morning' when I wake up and see they've parked their metal as close to my head as possible... even when I park with red (curb color to indicate 'no parking') behind me... I feel this fury that someone was willing to do this... intentionally hurt their Brothers and Sisters – because after years of this routine... these functionaries know exactly what they're doing... and the signs (messages) on my car let them know exactly where they are.

The injury from EMF-weapons mimics more than physical diseases... it mimics the psychic injury of absence of empathy – its invisibility – which is the chief injury of 'class'... what all of us under 'class' suffer... as a direct result of the 'normal' operation of 'the system'...

...because 'class' itself is an injury that we don't consciously experience as an injury (until we do... until we help each other to...) it recapitulates... mirrors perfectly... our earliest injury (under 'class'...) of being completely unseen...

As infants not having yet acquired speech... this lack... when confronted with abusive speech... necessarily puts us... and can make us feel (eventually... if it's a recurring event...) at a disadvantage... When speech is used as a weapon against us... either by being false... or by being used to force... compel... us... it prompts many questions (Samuel Butler explored this situation... and reaction... in *The Way of All Flesh*...)

We are gifted at birth with the 'knowing' of how to confront threats to our equanimity... 'vegetative balance'... and so are prepared for that... we are not prepared for the unnatural and perverse circumstance of a threat to both from a parent... from someone who is supposed to want for us to be as powerful as we want ourselves to be...

...when what happens to the child is the opposite of this... quite a conundrum is presented to the infant... it finds itself in a lose-lose position (a central... and telling... obsession of 'power's... is figuring out how to 'accomplish' this: putting us in lose-lose situations...) a strategy which expresses 'power's repetition compulsion... and which we definitely see repeated in their actions toward those over whom they have the 'power' of control...

...and none of this... as powerful beings – endowed with a power we all start out with – sits well in us... but particularly the invisibility of the whole process: the fact that it's never acknowledged... never the occasion for explanation... it's as if 'nothing' ever happened...

An injury done to us about which the perpetrator is oblivious... makes us furious... and not just because it re-stimulates our original experience of empathy's absence that we 'received' from our parents when we were infants... but because it is an on-going offense under 'class' – this imposed invisibility... imposed lack of empathy – an on-going violation of our original wholeness... our experience... of our common 'being'... our 'oneness' (empathy) as living things...

'Power's tactic of ensuring its complete invisibility... when diffused throughout the injury of 'class'... sets us up for endless mutual mistreatment... blaming... abusiveness... accusation... sets us up for endless heartache – because we want someone to blame... we want to restore balance... equanimity... fairness... to our lives... and ultimately to our global human society...

So... as Alice says... our anger is needed... to expose wounds to healing...

...but... we are learning... that this process of exposure and conscious grieving is needed not just in our interpersonal relations... but in 'power'-made 'class'-relations overall... that we need to address 'power's totalitarian 'system' itself – and the circularity of the tactic's operation is yet another way we see the totalitarian reality with which we are dealing...

But we are not yet having the discussion we need about the injury of 'class'... so when we experience it... that amorphous wound of force that causes such rage in us... it is the person closest to us who seems to have 'caused' it... because they (all of us) manifest it without knowing it – which ensures continuing repetition of the wound... continuing non-discussion of it... continuing rage... and continuing viability for the tactic of invisibility...

And when our invisible wound is never owned by those who are its immediate cause... our sense of injury is continuously re-stimulated... and we continuously seek 'others' to blame for it...

It's the continuousness of the injury... I think... that precipitates the need to find a way to forgiveness... because the mutilation of our love is intolerable...

...but an indirect path... focused on interpersonal relations... is insufficient for the eradication of the ongoing injury: we have to address the injury of 'class' directly...

...and by this means... simultaneously... in discussions of “the story of 'class'...” and 'power's tactics of containment... its strategy of invisibility particularly... can we out the use of... EMF-weaponry.

—

[“160228hiddenpowersilences_6.mp3”:]

Aspects of an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'self-defense practice... (Part 1)

This morning on my walk (on February 26...) I thought... but we don't yet have a model for how we would do this – a model based in wholistic self-defense and distributed generation... a model as flexible and open as we ourselves... that allows us to meet in any number that works... that tolerates agents... that builds our power... that energizes us for realizing our common goal of generalized human freedom... that helps us become whole again by experiencing the injury of 'class' with consciousness...

...and then... there was a gradual realization... that it was right in front of me... and I hadn't seen it (a very common experience for me...)

“Kate models how it would work...” I thought...

I've been taking Kate's class in Tai Chi... every Monday and Thursday morning at eight. It's not what I thought it would be... but we won't go into that yet... my point is the model she provides of distributed leadership... shared authority – Kropotkin's notion of the blossoming of initiative... courage... and intellectual honesty... in an environment of mutual aid:

...she understands that states target people... and while she can't know for certain that I'm being targeted (outside of her class we see each other infrequently and when we do the obvious targeting fades and the assault is in any case invisible...) she lets me take care of myself... doesn't judge my frequent change of location on the floor...

...we stay focused on why we're there... we assume each other's power... and help unasked if we perceive the need to...

She models that we can do this: design a wholistic 'self-defense 'class' that is 'purposed' with achieving global human freedom...

...and this puts her at risk... but she already is... because she was Coleen's first student – followed her into the African People's Socialist Party before there was a Hand To Hand – and... she respects children... works with them lovingly.

There is a woman in this class who I was thinking of... when I wrote the above about 'at-risk-parents'... a woman who's been diagnosed with Parkinson's... who flew to Hawaii just before I was about to speak to her... worry was worrying my tongue... all else it had overcome...

(... 'all else'?... what else? – it is the invisibility of 'class'-injury that silences us... it is the invisibility of its subversion-tactics that silences us... it is the invisibility of its weapons used against us that silences us... it is the hidden-ness of 'power' that must be overcome... for us to achieve our freedom.

—

[“160228impossibleto understand_7.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

“Unintentional Cruelty Hurts, Too” (continued)

{Alice was just telling us that making the tragedy visible offers the possibility for change... essentially the theme of today's show... – P.S.]

It would be wrong to say that, because we understand its origins, the harm we compulsively inflict on another person does not cause harm and that little Paul [Klee] did not hurt the girl. To recognize this makes the tragedy visible but at the same time offers the possibility for change. The realization that even with the best will in the world we are not omnipotent, that we are subject to compulsions [under 'class'... – P.S.], and that we cannot love our child in the way we would like may lead to sorrow but should not awaken guilt feelings, because the latter imply a power and freedom we do not have. Burdened by guilt feelings ourselves, we will also burden our children with guilt feelings and tie them to us for a lifetime. By means of our mourning we can set our children free.

Distinguishing between mourning and guilt feelings might also help to break the silence between the generations on the subject of the crimes of the Nazi period. Mourning is the opposite of feeling guilt; it is an expression of pain that things happened as they did and that there is no way to change the past. We can share this pain with our children without having to feel ashamed; guilt feelings are something we try to repress or shift to our children or both.

Since sorrow reactivates numbed feelings, it can enable young people to realize what their parents once inflicted on them in the well-meaning attempt to train them to be obedient from an early age. This can lead to an eruption of justifiable anger and to the painful recognition that one's own parents, who are already over fifty, are still defending their old principles, are unable to understand the anger of their grown child, and are hurt and wounded by reproaches. Then the child wishes he or she could take back what has been said and undo all that has happened, because now the old familiar fears that these reproaches will send the parents to their graves return. If children are told early and often enough, “You'll be the death of me yet,” these words remain with them all their life.

And yet, even if a person is once again left alone with this awakened anger because his aging parents can bear it just as little as before, the mere admission of this feeling to consciousness can lead them out of the dead end of self-alienation. Then at long last the true child, the healthy child, can live, the child who finds it impossible to understand why his parents are hurting him and at the same time forbidding him to cry, weep or even speak in his pain. [The child] who adapts to parental demands always tries to understand this absurdity and will accept it as a matter of course. But he has to pay for this pseudo-understanding with his feelings and his sensitivity to his own needs, i.e., with his authentic self. This is why access to the normal, angry, uncomprehending, and rebellious child he once was had previously been blocked off. When this child within the adult is live liberated, he will discover his vital roots and strength.

To be free to express resentment dating back to early childhood does not mean that one now becomes a resentful person, but rather the exact opposite. For the very reason that one is permitted to experience these feelings that were directed against the parents, one does not have to use surrogate figures for purposes of abreaction. Only hatred felt for surrogates is endless and insatiable – as we saw in the case of Adolf Hitler – because on a conscious level the feeling is separated from the person against whom it was originally directed.

For these reasons I believe that the free expression of resentment against one's parents represents a great opportunity. It provides access to one's true self, reactivates numbed feelings, opens the way for mourning and – with luck – reconciliation. In

any case it is an essential part of the process of psychic healing. But anyone who thinks that I am reproaching these aging parents would be misunderstanding my meaning completely. I have neither the right nor the grounds to do so. I was not their child, was not compelled by them to be silent, was not raised by them, and – as an adult – know that they, like all parents, could do no differently than behave the way they did.

Because I encourage the child within the adult to acknowledge his feelings, including his resentment, but do not absolve him from these feelings, and because I do not place blame on the parents, I apparently create difficulties for many of my readers. It would be so much simpler to say it is all the child's fault, or the parents', or the blame can be divided. This is exactly what I don't want to do, because as an adult I know it is not a question of blame but of not being able to do any differently. Children cannot understand this, however, and they fall ill in the attempt to do so because of a lack of access to their feelings. Only if the child in the adult suspends his futile attempt to understand can he begin to feel his pain. I believe that the children of those adults who finally dare to face their feelings will benefit as a result.

Perhaps even this explanation cannot clear up the misunderstandings that frequently arise in this connection, for they are not rooted in the intellect. If someone learned from an early age to feel guilty for everything and to regard his parents as beyond reproach, my ideas will of necessity cause him feelings of anxiety and guilt. We can see just how strong his attitude, instilled at an early age, is by observing older people. As soon as they find themselves in the situation of physical helplessness and dependence they may feel guilty for every little thing and may even regard their grown children as stern judges, providing the children are no longer submissive as they once were. As a result, the grown children feel they have to spare their parents out of considerateness, and the fear of hurting them condemns the children to silence once again.

Since many psychologists never had the opportunity to free themselves from this fear and to find out that parents need not die if they hear the truth about their child, they will be inclined to encourage a “reconciliation” between patients and parents as quickly as possible. If the underlying rage has not been experienced, however, the reconciliation is an illusory one. It will only cover over the rage that has been bottled up unconsciously or has been directed against others and will reinforce the patient's false self, even at the expense of his children, who will certainly sense the parent's true feelings. And yet in spite of these impediments, there are an increasing number of books in which young people confront their parents more freely and openly and honestly than was previously possible. This fact awakens hope that critical writers will produce critical readers who will refuse to allow themselves to be made to feel guilty (or more guilty) by the “poisonous pedagogy” to be found in the professional literature (in the areas of education, psychology, ethics, or biography).

[This concludes the chapter “*Unintentional Cruelty Hurts, Too*” ... – P.S.]

[The February 28, 2016 show ends here.]

—

[“160306ourfireforfreedom_1.mp3”:]

The March 6, 2016 show – themes and things: “The content of 'wholistic self-defense... continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice... for forming ourselves into 'a people' (as fully-developing-individualities...) that believes in our right to happiness... must do – our effective model must (among other things...: start with 'the right story'... let the body speak... address all the weapons and tactics stacked against it... discuss 'freedom or forgiveness through mourning'... 'integrating the trauma of 'class' into our personalities'... 'being the emphatic partner'... as well as... 'something to defend: the truth...' then... seeing reality: that only by our being the emphatic partner can we end 'power's cycle of repetition... and... seeing the reality that: 'love rules' our need to be strategic as well as the principle of utility we apply in our work...' and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 17... pages 113 – 120)

February 29, 2016... 'Coercion' is a subtle thing... into my heart it did creep – it happens... I've noticed... when these remarkable times we're in... part of our necessary transition to freedom... shifts the ground beneath my feet... and worry walks in...

...apologies in advance when I am too impatient... to see our 'upstart Spring' become reality... Only too well I know... the mind fixed on that path must be well-considered... But... I also know... that only by claiming that path openly... publicly... and loud... only by bringing light and attention to it... can we stay that itchy finger of 'power's on the trigger of the gun it has trained on our heads...

...for they know... only too well... that once a fire for freedom – in this moment... this moment when... we have instantaneous global communications – that once our fire for freedom is well-lit... they cannot extinguish it...

Sisters and Brothers: What does it mean to “renounce 'the state' in us... and are the existence of 'the state' and 'the pursuit of happiness' mutually exclusive'? And why is this the only route to our (always present...) tenderness? We've been arguing that the 'normal' operation of the global-'class'-system *requires* us to mistreat each other. As we engage in discussions to flesh out and clarify this basic notion (basic to our reclamation and creation of our true selves...) we will be establishing the true story... out of which our freedom... our future... our authentic selves can be borne. This is a multi-faceted process of reclamation and creation: reclamation and creation of our original power of body... of mind... and of spirit.

When our true selves were suppressed... it silenced our bodies... Gradually... we will be overcoming this... as we discover the power that lives within us... so that it may “emerge and grow light.”

We are creating a new process. Hopefully we will share what we learn with each other as we go.

[“160306amorphouswound_2.mp3”:]

Aspects of an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'self-defense practice: reincorporating our power through physical... intellectual... and spiritual integration and expansion... (Part 2)

Rereading my earlier comments on the section of Alice we will be reading today – “Unlived Anger” – in light of our thought-process last week:

...imposed invisibility / lack of empathy... is an on-going injury under 'class' – an on-going violation of our original wholeness... of our original experience of 'oneness' (empathy) as living things... that sets us up for endless mutual mistreatment... blaming... abusiveness... accusation... So... as Alice says... our anger is needed... to expose wounds to healing... But we are learning that this process of exposure and conscious grieving is needed not just in our interpersonal relations... but in 'power'-made 'class'-relations overall... that when we experience the injury of 'class' – that amorphous wound of force that causes such rage in us – it is a continuous... self-perpetuating... injury... because 'class' is totalitarian... which ensures continuing repetition of the wound... continuing non-discussion of it... continuing rage... and continuing viability for the tactic of invisibility... And when our invisible wound from childhood is never owned by those who are its immediate cause... our sense of injury is continuously re-stimulated by the state / parent (and its surrogates...) throughout life... and we continuously seek 'others' to blame for it...

I found myself wondering... given our focus on global human freedom... what... more precisely... should be the right balance... in our 'practice' of reclaiming our original wholeness... between our attempt to re-experience the 'unlived anger' from early childhood trauma (and what form should that 're-experiencing' take?) and the broader impositions and implications of saturated force in our lives... sprung from the dual injury of state-imposed invisibility and lack of empathy.

We shall have to see... but what seems so... is that... as the one is but micro to the other's macro... to 'out' – make visible: “all difficulties are but easy, when they are known...” – the macro form... we must 'out' the micro... meaning... that we should invite shared discussions of Alice based in our personal experience. And this for a number of reasons: to do so will enrich our understanding of Alice... strengthen the bonds between us... allow us to 'see' the link between the 'state'-parent... and coercion broadly... and its expression in our personal lives – help us concretize key concepts we will want to share with the broader community...

[“160306startwithrightstory_3.mp3”:]

As a 'first take' at thinking through what an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice... for forming ourselves into 'a people' (as fully-developing-individualities...) that believes in our right to happiness... must do – I'd say that our effective model must (among other things...): start with 'the right story'... let the body speak... address all the weapons and tactics stacked against it... discuss 'freedom or forgiveness through mourning'... and 'integrating the trauma of 'class' into our personalities'... 'being the emphatic partner'... as well as... 'something to defend: the truth...' then... seeing reality: that only by our being the emphatic partner can we end 'power's cycle of repetition... and... seeing the reality that 'love rules'

our need to be strategic as well as the principle of utility we apply in our work..." What follows could be viewed as 'discussion sessions' for the group... [quoted comment is from "Reflections of 3.7" or otherwise in the show to which it is attributed...]

- ...start with 'the right story': "The difficulty facing us... we who are determined to get our freedom... is that the difficulty facing us has been intentionally misidentified throughout the course of our lives..." ["Reflections of '3.7'" from the November 15, 2015 Show] "The fact that hidden-folks... 'power's agents... have insinuated themselves into every nook and cranny of our lives (and especially into our resistance) feels like a new thing... but only because we are only now confronting it openly... with tools that allow us to discuss the strategy globally... Karl Marx (in his *Eighteenth Brumaire* examination of the December 10 Society...) has shown us that it has been going on as a global strategy (thinking in terms of the interstate system) of the global-state-statesmen for at least one and a half centuries." [from the November 22, 2015 Show] Marx was looking for money and means... so to theorize how we-the-people would conquer them... thereby 'guaranteeing' our freedom... it wouldn't even occur to him to look for child-rearing activists... for a bunch of Humboldts and Cousins... installing the 'systems'... that would make us all – 'rulers' and 'ruled'... 'shepherds' and 'sheep' – obedient to... and lusting for... 'Authority'... – because that's how we got conquered... that's what we needed Marx's eyes on... not the stage... the theater... ...others... like Albert O. Hirschman... who wrote *The Passions and the Interests*... saw a different trajectory: the 'evolution' of 'statecraft' – putting the hand that crafts... their acts... before the abstractions that "Thought" creates... to legitimate those actions. Because 'explanation' in terms of 'inherent laws of development' is necessarily legitimization. What Hirschman found... a continuously renewed and strengthened attendance to Plato's dictum... "there must be no split in the unity of 'the master class'..." i.e.... the point then... now... and ever will be while it lasts: preserving 'class'... which means... 'herding the cattle'. [from the September 6, 2015 Show]

["160306letthebodyspeak_4.mp3":]

(Once we start having our Global General Strikes... once the injury of 'class' is discussed... once we let our bodies speak... getting our freedom won't take long... our wholeness will reconstitute itself... and take heart... every baby is born free... they don't have any problem letting their bodies speak... their bodies speak just fine...)

- ...let the body speak: the injury (pain) must find voice: "Shouldn't our actions be guided by 'Reason'? But there's no contradiction... it's the split... and the suppression... that's the issue... the elevation of 'mind'... the silencing of our bodies' – that's the 'class'-system – the omnipresent propaganda that we are here to serve... – which means what our bodies want can never be our priority – that's the 'class'-system – that we must ignore them... to be 'productive'... when what we want for our lives... is 'wholism'... and honesty – we are so *made* for being straightforward... it's a basic premise for our thought to grow – *and* what we want is continuous growth... happiness – happiness being self-creation – by having our core-self – our fellow travelers-in-mission – wrap us in love... by having a prize that we never lose sight of... by having clear principles and practices that guide." ["Reflections of '3.7'" from the November 22, 2015 Show]

["160306eyeslockedontheprize_5.mp3":]

- ...address all the weapons and tactics stacked against it... against our authentic existence: particularly 'power's 'hidden-ness'...and its use of hidden weapons against us... and the problem of our atomization... "although... given... we are the ones who reproduce 'the system'... but in yokes and in harnesses... isn't the real issue then... inculcated and structurally maintained mistrust... lack of trust of our Brothers and Sisters? Could it be our mistrust and sense of dependency comes from the coerced-work system?... a system in which we are but 'resources' for 'power's use... the very one we want to move beyond... to a freedom based in individual self-sufficiency and non-coercion? Could it be we only feel insufficient... because we've been kept separate?... and so our abundance kept hidden from us... and that we must compose it again... with consciousness? ["Reflections of '3.7'" from the November 29, 2015 Show]

- ...open... flexible... and alternating leadership... "As to being 'led' by any particular one... this must be denied by the very structure of our cooperative association... ...because the basic unit of political organization – in the transition no less than in our freedom – is 'the individual'... What does that mean? It means self-sufficiency politically (and there's a lot captured in that phrase which we'll have to unpack...) It means the light of our individuality shines bright... It means... as Whitman said... no papers bind our agreement... only our spirit of freedom leads us..." [from the November 22, 2015 Show]

- ...staying open': ready to 'reply' to whatever floats by... while nonetheless staying centered... in balance... whatever wave comes on the rough ocean... as... a 'made-totalitarian'-reality is constructed to try to keep us jumping from problem to

problem... but... our eyes must stay locked on our prize... while not overlooking threats to its existence... This can only be addressed 'structurally'... i.e.... through the absence of rigid structure...

- ...freedom or forgiveness through mourning: 'forgiveness' implies (requires) knowledge of the truth – of the injury of 'class' – knowledge of the truth implies (allows... brings about...) freedom... through mourning... resurrected empathy: truth dissolves the need for 'forgiveness'... unless the injury is on-going... which it cannot be... once we are all working together on exposing the falseness... for in the constructed 'reality' of 'class' we are all implicated...

[“160306omnipresentperformance_6.mp3”:]

- ...seeing the totalitarian 'reality' of 'class': “Because 'class' is totalitarian – global and omnipresent throughout all social institutions – the problem of freeing ourselves from its influence is much bigger... we challenged Alice to consider... than she seemed willing to own – i.e.... the fact that 'class' is totalitarian means that there is a *generalized* suppression of authentic feeling and thought... across the global populations... in direct proportion to the strength of that 'internalized state' in us...” [from the January 10, 2016 Show]
- ...seeing omnipresent coercion: And we must see omnipresent coercion as a direct function of that totalitarian 'reality' of 'class'... if not just another name for it... its intentional embedment throughout all aspects of our lives... throughout every inch of the construction we have been calling 'reality'... “Considering the qualities that we are *expected to display* (perform – we are expected to be: 'good-natured, kind, appreciative, undemanding, not to cry, always to see everything “from the positive side,” never to be critical, never to be dissatisfied, always to think of those who were “much worse off...” – are these not the qualities expected of a 'good worker'?... are we not all... under 'class'... expected to be 'productive'?” [from the January 10, 2016 Show]
- ...seeing omnipresent falseness... the construction of 'reality' by and for the few: “And given the training we all receive... under 'class'... in utilitarianism... subjected to varying degrees of manipulation and coercion... in every social institution of 'class' – in order to 'mold' this 'desired' behavior... coerce into being these qualities – given this generalized (often unconscious) expectation (under 'class') that we exist to serve 'the economy'... and that children must be trained (shaped) accordingly... when a fresh new life enters this 'scene' (and it is very much a 'scene' – a theater-construction...) a child who sees the world 'right-side-up'... i.e.... honestly... who has not been conditioned to believe that it exists to be of service... what is the reaction of this child to this 'molding' process? Is it not rage?...” Is that not the reaction we should all be re-experiencing once we understand what happened... and how it happened... [from the January 10, 2016 Show]

[“160306normalizedcruelty_7.mp3”:]

- ...seeing hidden-'power': And all of this is to preserve the 'hidden-ness' of 'power'... in order to keep them safely in the background... it creates a world in its own image so that it isn't seen at all... it actually just disappears into the structure of 'society'... which we are... they hope... conditioned to accept as 'inevitability'... as just what 'civilization'... or 'society'... requires to exist – and how better to do this than to design us from infancy up... design us to not care about anyone else – all of it a lie... “It's perfectly clear and obviously true... that the parent does the work of the state in conditioning us to subsume our 'will' – i.e.... what our bodies want – to the command of 'Authority'... to 'the state'. So long as the parent does this work... 'the state' continues. Yet never is this said on the Left... that ending this torturing of children called 'child-rearing' is the *only way* for this 'system' of 'class' to end... It's not just Fascism that is distinguished by its underlying hate... but totalitarianism broadly... and saying that... knowing that 'class' is totalitarian... strikes sharply obvious... yet another – the original – of suppressed speech under 'class'... that names an underlying reality – an obvious truth that *must never be spoken*... only accepted – in *exactly* the same way the biblical text exhorts children to respect the parent... however cruel... the child feels the underlying motive of hate... and cannot even become confused by it... because the parent *must not* be questioned... the parent is the deputy of 'the state' – we... as parents... have to be willing to discuss this... The normalized cruelty called 'child-rearing-under-class' explains the cruelty with which *all* those who are *made*-dependent are treated. It could not be more obvious or straightforward: allow children to be 'big'... powerful... and we end 'the system'... everything comes back to this – our quiescence in the face of obvious... overwhelming arrogance and cruelty on the part of the state... its amassing of tremendous resources of coercion and control... while we... just watch it happen... as if it's not happening to us... but to those 'others'... 'weak'... dependent... and so they must deserve it...” [from the November 22, 2015 Show]

[“160306somethingtodefend_8.mp3”:]

- ...integrating the trauma of 'class' into our personalities... experiencing it consciously: And so the training goes... on and on... that is what is intended... in any case – we are now interrupting that heretofore 'circle of contempt'... as Alice Miller terms it... we are interrupting it by consciously integrating the trauma of 'class' into our personalities... “Power's strategy of ensuring that everything it does stays hidden (by means of fundamentally dishonest child-rearing...) has been its chief advantage. It means... among other things... that it can skew anything and everything that happens to its ends / purposes (set aside its straight-up invention... fabrication... and lies...) without us knowing there was intention... such that it 'seemed' (to the absent...) to happen organically... and we could not address what was happening: the omnipresent dishonesty... the manipulation of our children... the 'end' to which we were being driven... We couldn't advance our ethical stance because we couldn't see the unethical one confronting us: the *creation* of 'class'... the manufacture of a sculpted 'reality'... the massive mistreatment sanctified by order of 'the state'. 'Class' *means* the targeting of us... and our Brothers and Sisters. 'Class' *means* the sanctification of bullying.” [from the November 22, 2015 Show] So... we have something to defend here... something really critical... in order to not pass on to anyone else... and not to our children... this 'virus' called 'class'... called 'hierarchy'... called 'ranking'... called 'decision-making-by-the-few'... called 'the-stripping-of-power-and-gifts-from-the-vast-vast-many' – we have something to defend: the truth... ourselves... we are... in microcosm... everything... the truth is we are infinite... the truth is we are 'big'...

- ...something to defend: the truth: “...so... just as the illusion was layered... piece by piece... upon us... so... in just this way of 'layered-ness'... perhaps... for some... must certainty come – and this is what we'll be doing... we'll be peeling that onion... when we get out with our 'creation work' with our communities: first doubt as to the lies we are told arrives with new information that challenges them... then questions... and with them... thought develops... as we seek out discussion... and then looking about us... testing our new insights... noticing how powerfully they explain... and then eventually the enormity of the outrage of massive Dishonesty... explodes into our psyche... and then we have certainty... And throughout this process... there is an unthawing of Feeling... a releasing of memory... a reinterpretation of what happened... as we allow-in our sadness... face the difficult truth: that what we most wanted... meant absolutely nothing to the people who loved us... our parents.” [from the November 29, 2015 Show] And we modified that... I recall... it meant something to our parents... but they... like we... were trapped... didn't know what to do... but we are changing that... “To get to our 'freedom/reunion'... we must: know what we want (we spent some time on this question – with the help of Kropotkin... we have a much better sense now of what that is...) see what stands against it (and not be daunted because there is such enormous 'hidden-ness' confronting us... although our getting it is not 'inevitable'...) and be determined to get there. I believe this last comes from 'Aidos' – the Balance – our earth-given gift of Fairness.” [from the November 22, 2015 Show]

- ...seeing reality: 'love rules' our need to be strategic as well as the principle of utility we apply in our work – whatever strategies we devise... whatever tests of utility we apply... love rules everything...

[“160306madeunsafetocontrolus_9.mp3”:]

- ...seeing reality: that only by our being the emphatic partner can we end 'power's cycle of repetition: “For in showing and modeling true wealth... our true abundance... showing the creative power of it... we are showing our Brothers and Sisters themselves: that which they have (to play on the words of Shakespeare...) but do not yet possess... and this is true for all of us... under 'class'... to an extent. For all of us it is a continuous process... of re-becoming authentic: as Bruce Lee says “to express oneself honestly... not lying to oneself... that... my friend... is very hard to do...” [from the December 6, 2015 Show]

- ...locating centrally in our practice our right to pursue happiness: reclaiming our bodies... our authentic selves... our full power... – With a whole 'self' in hand... we are free from fear – i.e. the perception that there is a need for aggregated 'power' to 'protect us' fades... fades in the recognition... that the bounty that we are together means that 'scarcity' is manufactured by deviousness... by craft... by those who want exclusive power of control of us... but... we have to see it... it has to manifest in physical existence – we are not talking about an 'inner' transformation alone... but an 'inner' transformation driving the transformation of a global 'system'... into a global society...

...this means creating this society in micro on the local level...

In our identification last week of those at risk for getting targeted with EMF-weapons... we included those who are authentically-powerful (and the risk they run is all the greater the wider is their reach to and influence with their Brothers and Sisters...) Authentic power presents a direct challenge to “the story of 'power'... of 'rule' by 'the best'... and so the *sight* of it... no less than the publishing – in print and voice – of suppressed thoughts... gets targeted for repression. In our shows on Antonio Gramsci we referred to our authentic power... using his thought-process... as the 'economic (creative) element' that has been suppressed that is the source of the transformative power that brings our authentic de-centralized society based in 'no hierarchy'... 'no coercion'... self-directed development of our gifts (happiness...) and the individual as the basic unit of social ('political') organization.

The *appearance* we are presented with as children is a 'system' in possession of all the 'power'... which represents 'safety' to the child (while *people* as individuals are presented to us as stripped of power...) – a 'safety' the need for which magnifies in importance the more unsafe the world is made... and the 'power'-guys have effectively endless resources to continuously and increasingly *make* the world unsafe – what does this tell us?... What trajectory are we looking at?

...and this is an escalating problem to the degree resources 'available' 'for us' shrink (because it's not just that resources are being consumed – under the cloak 'economic growth'... it's that resources 'available' *for us* are 'shrinking'...) which occurs at an exponential rate in a 'system' 'requiring' 'continuous expansion of the rate of profit' – the whole of which increases 'power's (already enormous...) fear of us... and belief in the need to more tightly 'manage' / 'control' us... placing our health and security increasingly at risk... and in particular those who offer authenticity to oppose systemic falseness...

[“160306buildingcapacitytorespond_10.mp3”:]

...true selves are not subject to control... so... the 'interest' of 'the state' and 'the pursuit of happiness' are mutually exclusive... moreover...

...the 'coerced-work-system' and 'the pursuit of happiness' are likewise incompatible... as Sebastian de Grazia pointed out (in *Of Time, Work, and Leisure...*) over fifty years ago... and... “when Alice says that 'those who have spontaneous feelings can only be themselves... if they want to remain true to themselves...' that... 'when they sense that something is being demanded of them to which their whole being says no, they cannot do it...' that... “once they have found their authentic self... they will not be willing to relinquish it again for any price in the world...” – what's the difference between claiming one's spontaneous feelings... and claiming one's body – i.e. refusing a system of coerced work?... if one is an advance toward the restoration of a healthy humanity... is not the other as well?... This cannot be emphasized enough: we all want this... our self-creative energy has been suppressed... each one of us senses that we're being wasted... thrown away as worthless... each one of us is life that longs to live in the full possession of *all* our gifts – and 'all' requires *self*-directed. We've been waiting for help in how to do this... waiting for authentic clues beyond 'the system'... and we who are claiming our authentic selves can provide the outlet for this development... this longing-to-exist that are our authentic voices... [from the December 20, 2015 Show]

The challenge will lie in... our coming to agreement... on key definitions... as well as on intermediate objectives: what is 'the state-in-us'?... what does it mean to 'renounce' it?... what is the connection between re-experiencing '*class*' consciously and the release of spontaneous feelings?... including the 'unlived anger' from child-rearing... Given that we are there – engaged in a wholistic self-defense training – in order to “reclaim and recreate our original power of body... of mind... and of spirit...” (and in what sense are these aspects integrated?...) while simultaneously engaging in a process of continuous planning of Global General Strikes... what are the areas of interface between these two broad goals?

Speaking generally... they meet in the growth of our love... and they meet in the pursuit of happiness.

We are training toward a purpose... 'generalized human freedom' – yes... but that's too broad a focus to build local capacity for global efforts. Intermediate local and national efforts would both grow our numbers... here in the U.S.... and propel us toward our larger goal of building our capacity to simultaneously respond with our support when our Brothers and Sisters globally rise to challenge state-abusiveness toward them... and to plan the Global General Strike.

We have been arguing that the soul grows to comprehend the full scope of the injury we consciously experience... and what is required of us in what we see... and our willingness to take in 'all' is our 'freedom to grow'...i.e.... in our willingness to face

the wrong... we re-learn what it means to be free... 'breaking the cycle'... of 'slavery'... of obedience embedded in our psyches... becoming those needed souls that can see... design and help provide... and *be*... our alternative global society... and... 'manifesting' our new global society' requires... means... reconnecting with our bodies... means... as we said in our February 21, 2016 show... facing our fear of 'the unknown'... of mystery...

We've been so conditioned to believe that we must control that which is mysterious and powerful... conditioned to believe we must 'own' it to overcome our (conditioned) fear of it (you see what I mean by saying "we have been forced to become them..." to manifest... the 'state-in-us'...)

...but... if we let our bodies own our tongues... as part of our self-recovery process... i.e. as a regular practice... we start to overcome falseness... atomization and fear – in revealing the true self we let each other know we are not alone... through the interpersonal connections that allow mutual confidence and power to grow...

Our bodies may need at first the emphatic partner to find the confidence to speak... or they may not... but I think this is a route to *our* becoming emphatic partners... modeling a new way to be... for our Sisters and Brothers who have not yet begun thinking through – through and through – this matter of our freedom...

["160306inanalysis_11.mp3":]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

Unlived Anger

In October 1977 the philosopher Leszek Kolakowski was awarded the Peace Prize of the German Booksellers' Association. In his acceptance speech he spoke about hatred, with special reference to the event that was on many people's minds at that time, the hijacking of a Lufthansa plane to Mogadishu.

Kolakowski said that time after time there have been instances of people who are completely free of hatred and who therefore offer proof that it is possible to live without it. It is not surprising for a philosopher to talk like this if he identifies humanness with *consciousness*. But for someone who has been confronted with manifestations of unconscious psychic reality on a daily basis and who sees over and over again how serious the consequences of overlooking this reality are, it will no longer be a simple matter of course to divide people into those who are good or bad, loving or hate-filled. Such a person knows that moralizing concepts are less apt to uncover the truth than to conceal it. Hatred is a normal human feeling, and a feeling has never killed anyone. Is there a more appropriate reaction than anger or even hatred in response to the abuse of children, the rape of women, the torture of the innocent – especially if the perpetrators' motives remain hidden? A person who has had the good fortune from the beginning to be allowed to react to frustration with rage will internalize his empathic parents and will later be able to deal with all his feelings, including hatred, without need for analysis. I don't know if such people exist [under 'class'... – P.S.]; I have never met one. What I have seen are people who did not acknowledge their hatred but delegated it to others without meaning to and without even knowing they were doing it. Under certain circumstances, they developed a severe obsessional neurosis accompanied by destructive fantasies, or, if this did not occur, their children had the neurosis. Often they were treated for years for physical illness that was really psychic in origin. Some suffered from severe depressions. But as soon as it became possible for them to experience their early childhood hatred in analysis, their symptoms disappeared, and with them the fear that their *feeling* of hatred might cause someone harm.... [I am curious about this phrase 'in analysis'... about what exactly occurs 'in analysis'... my assumption is that what occurs is a process of probing questions... a process of careful selection of the right questions... to return the person to the feelings those questions (words... thoughts...) evoke... under the guidance of the emphatic partner who... in a sense... becomes that 'empathic parent' you referred to... a partner who creates the scene or scenes in which the anger arose... and then allows the 'child-within' to play it again... to 'redo' it... under conditions of 'safety'... the way it should have been: i.e. the 'child' is allowed to be 'big' and expressive... rather than 'small' and passive... allowed to see that the 'parent' survived it (their anger) and still loves them... So my question in raising this point is: can we 'construct' a similar process for ourselves... and our Sisters and Brothers?... allowing all of us to feel the anger... experience the grief... authentically... i.e. explained in its true context... its true history... experienced by the light of the ancestors' deep-sight... because of which... the true 'self' can grow in the wake of it... and we all grow stronger because of it: seeing ourselves get 'big' and expressive... as we should have been... and were in utero... and have become again... – P.S.]

["160306bottleduphate_12.mp3":]

...It is not *experienced* hatred that leads to acts of violence and destructiveness but hatred that must be warded off and bottled up with the aid of ideology, a situation that can be examined in detail in the case of Adolf Hitler. Every experienced feeling gives way in time to another, and even the most extreme conscious hatred of one's father will not lead a person to kill – to say nothing of destroying a whole people. But Hitler warded off his childhood feelings totally and destroyed human life because "Germany needed more Lebensraum [living space]," because "the Jews were a menace to the world," because he "wanted young people to be cruel so they could create something new" [...because 'the people' are beasts who are ruled by passion rather than reason...] "...because we need trained and qualified philosopher-kings to subdue them..." "because 'ancient Greece' was the flowering of 'Reason'... and shows how to 'manage' 'the people' so we can finally achieve it"... "because without 'rule by the best' there would be 'chaos'..." "because the disobedient and superfluous must be culled from the herd... for the greater good of the majority..." – the list of supposed reasons could go on and on... "with the aid of ideology..." the child is not permitted to express their quite legitimate anger at being repressed..." – P.S.]

[The March 6, 2016 show ends here.]

["160313_1.mp3":]

The March 13, 2016 show –

[Apologies for my ignorance of the 'time change'... and the resulting short-show... most of the planned text will be discussed next week...]

The '177' draft was suppressed... intercepted... substituted... with the previous draft... as I attempted to upload it to my website... there were drones a plenty for the task... I've placed the relevant passages on the 'Blog' page... just above the current date for the latest draft for this "Raise Up Love" shows pdf...

...and... by the way... more and more I'm convinced... because this is what I've experienced... that while they may have drones that can dispense EMF... the drones are mainly used for surveillance... precision-targeting... and for intercepting or interrupting wireless transmissions – i.e.... for plausible deniability... and to instill in us a false sense of the 'power'-guys supposed omnipotence... but that the main 'delivery-mechanism' for EMF-assault is elsewhere – an 'above' 'elsewhere'. This is what Leuren Moret says in her article, "The Historical Roots of the New World Order and Its Permanent War Economy": (<http://exopolitics.blogs.com/peaceinspace/2009/12/haarp-the-space-preservation-treaty-planet-earth-as-weapon-target-by-leuren-moret.html>) [discussed during our November 17, 2013 show which is included in the pdf: "Reclaiming Our Leadership: Waking Up Radio Conversations (Vol. 3)"] In this article Leuren Moret says that "HAARP is a space-based weapon of mass destruction and must be banned..." She tells us that as early as 1952 "a secret meeting was held in New Mexico between Russian and U.S. scientists at the Sandia Lab... [and that] an exchange of information on the biological hazards of microwave and electromagnetic frequencies and safety levels was not entirely successful... [that] shortly after the Russians began a thirty-year programme beaming the U.S. embassy in Moscow with microwaves, causing the deaths of three U.S. ambassadors and illnesses in employees..."

So when are we going to demand full disclosure on this weaponry?...

...and is it not clear that the 'power'-guys operate globally... and use states to keep us caged?

["160313craftedsmallness_2.mp3":]

The March 13, 2016 show – themes and things: "The content of 'wholistic self-defense – continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice... must do... for forming ourselves into 'a people' (as fully-developing-individualities...) that believes in our right to happiness: identifying our five key components..." and... "exploring the connections between the crafted falseness 'politics'... the crafted falseness 'economics'... and our designed

absence of empathy for each other...” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 18... pages 120 – 123)

March 8, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: Our recent discussions of the critical need – in order for us to achieve 'certainty' – for our necessary ethical stance – derived from our earth-given gift of 'fairness'... which moves us to act when the gross imbalance... lack of fairness... that is all around us... rises to the level of consciousness (and it is to prevent this that 'power' stays hidden inside its almost total control of our inter-communications and education... our access to information...) We've been arguing that this 'energy'... force ('sense of fairness'...) is being moved in us... in this moment... as we more and more perceive the crafted falseness of the 'world' we are directed to accept as legitimate – a world actively shaped by the 'power'-guys. Aidos the Balance arrives on the scene as we perceive the degree to which we've been lied to... This... 'rising-to-awareness' *is* “outing 'hidden-power'” (we are not concerned about who the particular people are... we are only concerned with getting 'un-meshed' from their smallness... which is within our power to do... and so all authentic life begs... that we get on with it... this matter of our freedom...) *is* exorcising 'the-state-in-us'... *is* overcoming our designed-in 'smallness'... from our designed-in absence of empathy... by creating 'our own things': authentic connections to challenge crafted atomization.

The structural backbone of the crafted falseness (smallness of spirit...) of this global 'class'-system – manifested in 'economics'... in 'politics'... in what we are told is our 'human nature' – is material insecurity: manufactured scarcity... another name for the enforced atomization they impose on us (and we're exploring that connection today...)

'Hidden-power' *is* this crafted smallness... its 'hidden-ness' is designed to conceal this point... that it has a goal: the 'meritocracy'... 'Perfection'...

By their acts consistent with this objective they are outed... but we have been prevented from discussing the obvious.

To 'achieve' a so-called 'meritocracy' – and thereby realize the vision of your 'OT' (Original Totalitarian) – what would you need? You would need Ideology – 'EPP' (Extreme Poisonous Pedagogy)... you would need 'TB' (Total Belief)... and you would need ATM (All The Money). The 'systems' for continuously delivering these things to them – and in an ever-increasing fashion – we can see have been achieved: extreme disparities in all three are not only clearly evident... they have replaced... if we are to judge by appearances only... the need for independent thought entirely... and are rapidly replacing the human being with the human machine.

This 'feat' has been accomplished by their three weapons-in-chief... used concertedly... with purpose... to achieve... their vision – and their 'hidden-ness'... the speed of their actions... and our atomization... have defeated all attempts to discuss our *feeling* that we are being driven... rushed like cattle to slaughter...

...otherwise we could not be kept from this discussion... because it's just too obvious...

...that if we have no earth of our own... for shelter... for sociability... for food...

...that if our only means of accessing these absolutely necessary things is owned or controlled by 'not-us'... we are screwed...

—

[“160313tiredofbeingcattle_3.mp3”:]

Of course... until now we did not have the Internet... so we are not going to be screwed much longer... because we are discussing these things apace... All over the globe we are tired of being treated like cattle... we are tired of our health being a matter of manipulation... of their whim... their amusement – there's no other way to interpret what's been going on...

And what is likewise obvious is that the past and present tense (but not the future...) must be used: that we have been... and are being... screwed...

...that shelter... sociability... and food... are systematically being made less and less available to us... are much more costly in even the systematically-'privileged' states... while in the systematically-disadvantaged states – most of which fall in the southern hemisphere – it is being made systematically unavailable... in order to create “'unrest' / 'chaos' / state-repression / elimination of population (despite the sanitized... no... lies that we are given for... 'news'... “war is always war on us...”

whether waged by states directly or through surrogates... with guns... or 'economic hardship'... by means of debt or corruption...)

...that the fact that the non-human resources upon which this very costly 'system' of 'continuously increasing accumulation' (which term is expressed 'politically' with the words "continuously-deepening 'class'" ...) is based are finite... and therefore cannot sustain it... has been well-known by 'power' for (conservatively) a century and a half...

["160313wholisticselfdefense_4.mp3":]

Aspects of an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'self-defense practice: reincorporating our power through physical... intellectual... and spiritual integration and expansion... Part 3: identifying our five key components...

(Five key components of our wholistic self-defense practice that I'm seeing at this point were identified during our reading of Alice that I want to capture here:)

It is so key that we begin planning... developing... creating... our own things... our vision of what we want... and particularly here in the U.S.... where we have the right to pursue happiness... and it *cannot* be suppressed without the state risking its complete de-legitimization...

Key components identified during our reading: • Community education involving the key concepts for exorcizing 'the state-in-us'... and for understanding "the story of 'class'"... • Grounding our new understanding in our bodies by incorporating these key concepts in movement and voice... • Organizing for Global General Strikes • Land acquisition for building Earthships – most likely city-owned abandoned lots... that simply require the pressure of numbers to be turned over to community responsibility and caring – for Earthships... establishing a demonstration site... modeling what our future looks like in micro... • (and here in the U.S. there is a fifth: organize a referendum to 'call the question' of our right to happiness...)

In (and through) all five of these key components we will be 'getting big' – we are going to be 'growing ourselves'... and that means the majority of the work will be done by us as individuals... will be our practice for 'getting big' (and this is partly to sort out... because it's a new practice... accommodate and adjust for false folk... because the state will ensure they will be there... and the points where we collectively present will be danger-points for state attempts to undermine... and misrepresent what is being done and advocated for...)

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

Unlived Anger (cont.)

How are we to explain the fact that, in spite of growing psychological awareness in the last decades, two-thirds of the people polled in Germany still believe that corporal punishment is necessary, good, and right for children? And what about the remaining third? How many of the parents among them feel compelled to strike their children against their better judgment and in spite of their good intentions? This situation is understandable if we take the following points into consideration.

One. For parents to be aware of what they are doing to their children, they would also have to be aware of what was done to them in their own childhood. But this is exactly what was forbidden them as children.

["160313globalempathyfreesus_5.mp3":]

[It seems to me – let's discuss it – that our 'reenactments' in our 'analytic' 'self-creation' process... may need to focus on 'coercion' more broadly... to encompass in our discussions our experience of early childhood... how we have perpetuated it... and where the behavior comes from: the intentional structuring of coercion throughout all aspects of our lives... throughout every inch of the construction we have been calling 'reality'... – P.S.] If access to this knowledge is cut off, parents can strike and humiliate their children or torment and mistreat them in other ways, without realizing how they are hurting them; they simply are compelled to behave this way.

Two. If the tragedy of a well-meaning person's childhood remains hidden behind idealizations [...and... clearly... the idealization of the 'big parent'... the state... must be discussed in this context as well... it is the difficulty-in-chief that we must overcome (within us...) to get to our freedom... All over the world there are uprisings today that fall into this pattern of 'idealization' and 'repetition compulsion'... uprisings that either (authentically or through the influence of clandestine action...) displace rage onto substitute objects... or... more rarely... can be viewed as an incipient rising-to-consciousness of our experience of 'class'-abusiveness... But we see as well in these desperate protests our inertia – in the face of the bully-state – about pursuing a path of self-sufficiency through working together – locally and globally... as well as the crisis of our inactive empathy – particularly here in the U.S. – which we address by means of the... step-by-step growth of our understanding through our training practice... and through our subsequent autonomous mutual association... That we are consciously associating as 'global' (i.e.... 'free' beings...) reflects our reclaimed empathy... When we hear of our Sisters and Brothers being slaughtered in confrontation with the 'states' that have claimed them as their property to dispose of they see fit – in India... Indonesia... South Africa... Somalia... Tunisia... Mexico – it's important that we have at the ready a meaningful response to it – 'meaningful' in the sense that *our full self is engaged*... If we are true to our authentic self... we have reacquired our empathy as well – the whole of which can only be erected on the solid edifice of the truth -- only through our possession of our clear “story of 'class'...” can we gradually begin melding these uprisings together... in Global General Strikes... and achieve our freedom... – P.S.] If the tragedy of a well-meaning person's childhood remains hidden behind idealizations, the unconscious knowledge of the actual state of affairs will have to assert itself by an indirect route. This occurs with the aid of the *repetition compulsion*. Over and over again, for reasons they do not understand, people will create situations and establish relationships in which they torment or are tormented by their partner, or both.

Three. Since tormenting one's children is a legitimate part of child-rearing, this provides the most obvious outlet for bottled-up aggression.

Four. Because an aggressive response to emotional and physical abuse is forbidden by parents in almost all religions, this outlet is the only one available.

[And I have to tell you... each day it is difficult... no matter how much living with it becomes the norm... it is difficult for me to really get... in my heart... that there are folk who intentionally cause ill-health – and this is a step beyond what was happening a half-century-plus-more-decades ago... in which they have actually 'fine-tuned' the frequencies... to simulate... if not actually create themselves – to mimic or create diseases to make us ill...

...are we feeling Miklos yet?... recall what he said: there is no worse criminal... than the criminal doctor... they're the ones who show 'power' how to kill us secretly...

...Without Alice... it would be impossible to understand... Endless thanks to you Alice..... – P.S.]

[The March 13, 2016 show ends here.]

—

["160320_1.mp3":]

The March 20, 2016 show – themes and things: “It is impossible to understand that which we try to 'understand': 'the state'...” and... “continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance must be – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice – to form ourselves into 'a people' that believes in our right to happiness'...” and... “making the coercion of 'class' conscious...” and... “exploring the connections between the crafted falseness 'politics'... the crafted falseness 'economics'... and our designed absence of empathy for each other (continued...)” and... “'hardening'... 'tempering'... our associations... through the recognition of our common collaboration with 'power' (under 'class'...) that 'coercion' is the common denominator of all 'class'-trauma... a trauma from which none are exempt...” and... “building capacity to support our reconstituted wholeness (empathy... unity...): the importance of our ethical stance in the face of 'power's sole obsession: 'to win' (continued...)” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” (Part 19... pages 124 –)

—

["160320idealizingthestate_1.mp3":]

March 15, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: in recent shows we have been probing...for a deeper understanding of our “story of 'class'”... as well as for its strategic utility – in order to design useful techniques to exorcise 'the state-in-us' – a re-conceptualized notion of 'the state' as 'the big parent'...

...in so doing we are 'advancing' the gift of Alice to encompass... with our understanding (and thereby integrating consciously...) our common experience of “the injury of 'class'”...

The fact that our personal experience as children under 'class' exactly parallels our social experience is what has allowed 'power' to hide in the 'structure' of 'society' itself... The idealization of the parent... the pattern that... as Alice has explained to us... conceals the normalized violence of child-rearing... easily transfers over... with the help of the ideological reinforcement (conditioning) of the education system and the workplace... to an idealization of 'the big parent'...

...and this dynamic explains much: our passivity and sense of powerlessness in the face of its ever-greater encroachments on our most basic 'rights'... its escalating assault on our spirits – its insistence on our increasing diminishment... while it bloats in size on what it strips from our hides.

'The state' tells 'its' subjects: “adjust yourselves to less and less of what makes life worth living...” or “this is for your own good...” and our response has been to try to 'understand' it – exactly the set-up... Alice warns... that will lose for us our true 'selves'... our original 'bigness'... forever...

And since the time of 'power's long-planned-for 'resource-shortages' is upon us... 'power' is very pleased when it imagines its conditioning of us is holding... and frowns when we challenge it... or become recalcitrant...

To foresee that gluttony... hoarding... and destruction... of all the vast treasures of our common planet would result in gross imbalances between those... and that... which produce this treasure... and the point-zero-zero-zero-one-percent who have appropriated it... to foresee this required no skill in prophesy – basic math sufficed.

So the Miniscule Few are busily reducing us... so it may live 'within its means'... and 'manage us “responsibly”’...

...it is time to take Alice's advice... stop 'understanding' the bully-state... stop trying to excuse what cannot be reconciled with truth... and... at long last... get on our own side...

[“160320endemfwithglobalstrikes_2.mp3”:]

We have to face the fact that resource-shortages...globally... far from being happenstance... have long been part of 'power's calculus... that... shelter... sociability... and food... are *systematically* being made less and less available to us... *systematically* made more costly in the states 'privileged'-by-craft... and systematically made unavailable in the states intentionally-kept disadvantaged (most of which fall in the southern hemisphere...) in order to create “'unrest' / 'chaos' / state-repression / elimination of population (“war is always war on us...” whether waged by states directly or through surrogates... with guns... or 'economic hardship'... by means of debt or corruption...)

...that 'power' well-knows that the non-human resources upon which this very costly 'system' of 'continuously increasing accumulation' (which term is expressed 'politically' with the words “continuously-deepening 'class'”...) is based are finite... and therefore cannot sustain it... has known it for (conservatively) a century and a half...

(...and of course the human 'political' / 'economic' resource: 'quiescent subservient populace'... upon which this very costly 'system' of “continuously-deepening 'class'” and 'continuously increasing accumulation' is based is likewise finite [as De Tocqueville... John Stuart Mill ...and many others since... including our 'Good Three' – Giovanni Arrighi... Terence K. Hopkins and Immanuel Wallerstein – have pointed out: that we are determined to get free... and all the more so as we share knowledge about how to do so... and the certainty that we deserve to be so... globally...] and therefore cannot sustain it... which explains 'power's determination to 're-make' us... ensure a world in its own image so that it isn't seen at all... so that it just disappears into the structure of 'society'... or rather ascend to Mount Olympus [and how better to do this than to design us from infancy up... design us to not care about anyone else... to not want to grow our gifts... to be satisfied with 'small-ness' (as they are... – I mean... what a con... this notion 'progress'... we're going to be continuously talking about that... it's their big one... in order to keep us subservient...) – so they want our conditioning

in subservience to hold... while they simultaneously reduce our numbers and increase hardship all over the globe... I'm really eagerly looking for some brave physician out there to start publicizing the fact that assault by EMF – electro-magnetic force – can simulate if not *create* disease... I'm really looking for those deep-analyses of diseases like Parkinson's and this new one we were just informed about – 'HAE' (discussed in our January 17, 2016 show...) – to look at the history of them... the development of these... and to 'do the work'... to prove to our Brothers and Sisters who are reluctant to believe such things of the 'bully-state': that these weapons can... in fact... cause cancer... and heart disease (and heart attacks...) and strokes... and congestive heart failure... and pneumonia – that they *can* do these things... Where's the tax-funded research on that? – all of our tax dollars to the National Institutes of Health or the CDC... should be trying to support our health preventatively by helping us get rid of electro-magnetic force weaponry... although I had to smile when I read in Lauren Moret's article (cited last week) on the historical roots of this “New World Order” of these 'power'-guys... Plato's Tribe... that these weapons “should be banned...” I don't know if she is aware that they are actually being used to create disease – and reduce the population by so doing – but it is impossible to believe that a 'High-Tech Auschwitz' scheme will be openly admitted to... which I think means that it would be difficult for them to agree to banning them... And if we have the necessary level of organization and consciousness to organize Global General Strikes... it's irrelevant whether they 'ban' them or not... because when we withdraw our human energy... gradually that will overtake the 'technicians of state' who operate these things: on some deep level... in their hearts... their souls... they want also to be free... just like we...]

[“160320ourinfiniterichness_3.mp3”:]

(What we need to push right now... and get behind... are the things that we all want... what unifies us – eliminate the false divides – and what we all want is a world that's honest and to own these bodies we walk around in: we want to be *fully* in charge of our own human energy...)

...and while this global tendency of increasing disproportions between what we are 'allowed' and what we want... this 'sculpting' process... is clear... it varies by state and 'place' in the global hierarchy... and we see with the global-state statesmen of China... 'power' based in the Chinese state... is hoping it seems to finesse another or resurrect 'its' defunct 'economic miracle' of the last third of the twentieth century by 'reconstituting' 'its' 'quiescent population... while increasing its 'middle-class' buffers... 'disappearing' itself into the structure of 'economic' and 'political' law... per the example of its brothers of the global-state...)

I'm certain these 'power'-guys see EMF-weapons as a 'humane' alternative to 'Auschwitz' proper... or 'perpetual strife'... manufactured for the 'cautionary states' of the global hierarchy...

...knowing that 'class'-basing-resources were finite... and seeing them being 'consumed' (removed from the reach of 'the people'...) at a clip that would shortly lead to the 'redundancy' of the majority... given systematic automation...

...that once the world was as automated as it was going to get... the question of what to do with the 'excess' “had to be addressed...” but... keep in mind this is viewing the bounty of our centuries of hard work from 'power's perspective... their perspective of 'control'... and 'management'... and 'forcing us to do as we're bidden'... and 'staying forever on top of a global hierarchical system'...

...*not*... from the perspective of 'the infinite richness that is each and every one of us...'

And because the 'tends' are 'set' structurally... the patterns are in place... of continuously-increasing-disparities in 'EPP' [“Extreme Poisonous Pedagogy”... 'Education'... we could say...] 'TB' [“Total Belief...] and 'ATM' [“All The Money”... – Our next series of shows will explore 'power's goal... 'ATM' – and our response to it – with Proudhon... along with the strategic necessity of 'hardening'... or 'tempering'... our associations such that they are not thrown off-balance by: our own unconscious childhood experiences of trauma... 'power's provocative actions and manufactured 'emergencies' – but instead serve as essential support... stand strong... for our Brothers and Sisters... in these times of made-crises we're in... What we are now seeing is that illusions (lies) are not sustained over time of themselves... but are rather systematically cultivated... fed... with intention... to perpetuate them (e.g. 'the economy'... 'progress'... 'civilization'...) by those who have an 'interest' in them...]

[“160320abandonmentpsych_4.mp3”:]

...the tends of continuously-increasing-disparities in 'EPP'... 'TB'... and 'ATM: "All The Money"... such that money can buy anything: food... shelter... a sense of efficacy...

...because money can determine what gets advanced and receives 'recognition'... who is 'seen' and awarded 'appreciation'...

...and because it is a global system... every state must participate in this "system of 'class'-creation and management"... and comply with the directive: "monopolize land... certainty... and money... and then dispatch your 'excess population'..." and I suppose we should add: "...or we'll do it for you..."

So we see how the global-state-statesmen can craft 'human nature' by means of the tool 'the economy' (and the strategy 'child-rearing'...) by manufacturing 'scarcity'... and we see the point Gramsci was making... that 'the economy'... and the 'polity'... are mutually-reflecting... but ... he needed to add: "mutually-reflecting of 'class'..."

[“160320empathyenrichesthought_5.mp3”:]

Aspects of an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'self-defense practice: reincorporating our power through physical... intellectual... and spiritual integration and expansion... Part 4: freeing ourselves frees others... recovering ourselves recovers our connections...

(Last week we named the essential components... which together are premised on and result in a process of 'getting big': • Community education involving the key concepts for exorcizing 'the state-in-us'... and for understanding "the story of 'class'"... • Grounding our new understanding in our bodies by incorporating these key concepts in movement and voice... • Organizing for Global General Strikes • Land acquisition for building Earthships – most likely city-owned abandoned lots... that simply require the pressure of numbers to be turned over to community responsibility and caring – for Earthships... establishing a demonstration site... modeling what our future looks like in micro... • [and here in the U.S. there is a fifth: organize a referendum to 'call the question' of our right to happiness...])

So immersed are we (because of our atomization... and our inability to share information...) in the effects of 'power's totalitarian scheming... that we have been unable to see... that their goal is to 'un-make' our humanity... strip us of our exquisite earth-given gift of empathy – which we'll notice in Proudhon when we turn to our reading of him... – and the fact that they want to rob us of what enriches our thought-process... while claiming that they are advancing knowledge for all of us... is just hideous.

[“160320bigwithconsciousness_6.mp3”:]

What the 'power'-guys want is to control us... so they seek out practices that... and people who... reach out to others with messages that counter 'power's key argument to the young people they've recruited to receive and continue 'the mission' of the 'Republic' (i.e.... establish the 'Perfect State' – 'the future' is determined... let's never forget... by structural inertia by means of "made-'complexity'"... and then the strict limiting of decision-making about the shape of the future – both the sense of what's possible... and who is allowed to determine it...)

...'power' targets for 'neutralization' those that counter the key argument that decision-making must be restricted to the 'identified' so-called 'best' – (this is... a.k.a.... the 'logic' of 'rule'... the notion that 'the goal' ['end'] of 'History' is the 'best state'... and that to make it... to create something new... to establish 'Perfection'... "You must be heartless... you must be cruel" (and that's the fascist element added to the 'philosophic temperament'...)

...by this method of systematic insinuation...infiltration... conquering of key messages... and occupation of leadership positions... it has re-made (un-made) numerous social inventions begun with the motive of love. It has done (is doing) this with religion... it has done (is doing) this with community-based agencies... it has done (is doing) this with the arts that are focused on soul-expression and expansion... it has done (is doing) this with the martial arts – and... it is done as a conscious... but largely unseen assault – because manufactured 'scarcity' has kept the vast Many-of-us too busy simply surviving to notice big schemes... which... in any case... may unfold slowly... over several lifetimes – an unseen assault upon our fundamental nature...

...our counter to a conscious scheme to systematically 'un-make' our humanity must be likewise conscious... We replace 'EPP' with knowledge of our roots... our sources of power... with our own things – as each one of us is a fount of untapped wisdom... knowledge... riches...

We replace 'ATM' with this abundance we make together – based in the principles of mutual aid... cooperation... and good fellowship...

We replace 'TB' with our trust in mystery... faith in our Brothers and Sisters... surrendering to our love of them...

There is only one way through this crisis we face... and to our lost gifts... our wholeness... and that's to get 'big'...

...to 'get big' with consciousness... with a vision... and with the conviction to defend it: the conviction that we deserve to be free... that we deserve to see... all around us... nothing but absolute honesty... that we deserve healthy (whole... authentic...) connections with all our relations (beginning with our immediate connections...) based in a model of social organization that is premised on fully-developing individualities (respect for individual autonomy...) de-centralized reproduction of society... and the distributed generation of our individual and social human energy.

[“160320notheretobemanaged_7.mp3”:]

We cannot become 'big' while ignoring the plight of our Brothers and Sisters (and our own...) but... by the same token... we cannot *will ourselves* to 'care'... and simultaneously be authentic... be true to our true selves...

The example of this man's distress illustrates well the situation... and the charge to us given – the challenge before us:

The ability to grieve [can bring parents] closer to their children... The same holds true for the relationship with grown children. I once talked with a young man who had just made his second suicide attempt. He said to me: “I have suffered from depressions since puberty; my life has no meaning. I thought my studies were to blame because they involved so much meaningless material. But now I have finished all my exams, and the emptiness is worse than ever. But these depressions don't have anything to do with my childhood; my mother tells me that I had a very happy and sheltered childhood.”

We saw each other again several years later. In the meantime, his mother had undergone analysis. There was an enormous difference between our two meetings. The young man had become creative not only in his profession but in his whole outlook; unquestionably, he was now living *his* life. In the course of our conversation he said: “When my mother loosened up with the help of analysis, it was as though the scales fell from her eyes, and she saw what he and my father had done to me as parents. At first it weighed on me the way she kept talking to me about it – apparently to unburden herself or to win my forgiveness – about how they had both in effect squelched me as a young child with their well-meaning methods of raising me. In the beginning I didn't want to hear about it, I avoided her and became angry with her. But gradually I noticed that what she was telling me was unfortunately entirely true. Something inside me had known it all along, but I was not allowed to know it. Now that my mother was showing the strength to face what had happened head-on, not to make excuses, not to deny or distort anything, because she felt that she, too, had once been a victim – now I was able to admit my knowledge of the past. It was a tremendous relief not to have to pretend any longer... She also doesn't have to prescribe rules of behavior for me anymore but lets me be as I am because she can be that way herself and because she is herself less under the pressure of rules and regulations. A great burden has fallen from me. I enjoy life, and it all happened without my having to go through a lengthy analysis. But now I would no longer say that my suicide attempts were unrelated to my childhood. It's just that I wasn't permitted to see the connection, and that must have intensified my feeling of desperation.

The challenge we face is to deepen...and extend... our concept of 'self' – because it has been artificially foreshortened... and we must correct this unnatural stance we have been forced into. We have been made 'small' so that a Tiny Few could 'deal with us'... 'manage us'... They are afraid of our power (and this is a fear as much of the possibility that their dreams of divinity are founded on sand – as much a fear that they will have to face as an illusion the notion that they possess a god-like superiority over us... that they are 'superior' period... as it is of seeing the material world returned to all of us...) and have worked in concert to amass the needed cash to force us to be 'manageable'...

We are not here to be 'managed'... but rather to fully extend the uncoerced human spirit into all directions...

In the above example... the young man... balanced on the edge of extinction... could see only the abyss...or... perhaps a better way to look at it... was absorbed by a pain that was almost unbearable... he *could not* care about his Brothers and Sisters... and... once free of it... became absorbed... understandably... with the story of his unexpected release...

...but had his pain – once openly acknowledged as pain... an injury to his psyche integrated consciously – had that pain been placed in a bigger frame... 'the right story'... the story of his release would be bigger... and so would *he*... he would be thinking new thoughts...

...and then... he could look about him... see that every human being was suffering under the weight of *massive* Dishonesty... be outraged that we *all* have been made 'small' in being separated and compartmentalized... categorized... robbed of our ancestors who labored to elaborate a clear alternative to 'class'... silenced... and then put in harness... strapped-in... and made to be common conduits for a 'system' of 'power'...

...and once he could see all this... *then* he could care about his Brothers and Sisters...

We are now at the point in our understanding of “the story of 'class'”... where we can see not only that Alice *can* be advanced to comprehend it... but that she *must* be...

The injury of monumental falseness... the fact that we have *all* been lied to... puts us *all* on the same side...

But the light of broad... monumental... truth... sets all things right... In *that* light... in the light of 'the right story'... the story of 'class'... we forgive our parents... we forgive each other... because we understand... and because we are all now starting down true paths... directed... with all authentic life... toward what is alive... whole... and healthy.

But we need “our own things” (this is where our authentic-self-defence practice comes in – how do we defend the true self?... and then... expand our numbers...) – expand our numbers and develop our own things... created separately and together... and placed in our 'new story'... the truth.

We know what 'health' feels like... we know what 'wholeness' is... we know it intuitively and we keep trying to restore it... while 'power' keeps getting in the way of it – a massive incongruity in our picture of 'health'... a massive interruption of our attempts to restore it – and this is because... as we began the show discussing... of that idealization of the 'big parent'... the 'bully-state'... which we are now getting past... with our wholistic self-defense practice... So the 'work' of the 'power'-guys is a massive interruption of our efforts to restore health... as they continuously bombard us (literally) with 'bad energy' – *literally* blocking our access to health by interfering with our bodies' earth-established frequency by blasting us with other frequencies that block our access to it (our natural electrical process...) while we continuously seek the healthy energy of the earth that we need to restore ourselves... and the earth... and each other... that we need to be healthy and whole.

What we understand now is that we can only do this together... 'Together' – good energy – breaks us out of the personal injury of 'the state'... an injury to our bodies... minds... and spirits... and we will be exploring together how to 'harden' our associations... by which I mean... become less and less vulnerable to that which would throw us off-track... We do this I think through our self-defense practice of 'staying open' consciously... through our open acknowledgement that every single one of us... until the world is free... manifests 'power'... i.e.... the 'system' of 'rule'... This is why our studies of Alice are so important... her guidance in helping us to see violence and coercion in their subtle or 'gentle' forms as well as their overt ones...

We know what 'health' feels like... but without 'the right story'... we keep falsely delivering... to each other... the blame for our inability to be healthy and whole... our 'dis-ease'... our injury...

But with 'the right story'... we 'out' hidden-power' (in ourselves and in the institutions of 'class'...) interrupt the pattern of recycling pain... and then end it altogether once we have “our own things...” the bounty of our common riches that blossom in... an authentic movement – one that originates in our common longing for global human freedom...

'Power's degree of organization for... and commitment to... realizing *its* vision – which puts the entire global population... and our common humanity... at risk – requires all hands on deck – all hands that can – all hands committed to getting their true selves back.

The difference between the repercussions of experiencing consciously our 'individual' traumas... as opposed to those from consciously experiencing the trauma of 'class'... could be compared to the difference between an individual versus a group inoculation: the latter allows the possibility of large-scale social transformation... particularly given our global means of instantaneous communications.

["160320upnextproudhon_8.mp3":]

(I'm anticipating that we'll have a couple more weeks with Alice Miller... and then we'll be turning to Pierre-Joseph Proudhon's *What Is Property*... which I'll continue posting little by little... and I hope you may get a chance to read it as I do.)

[The March 20, 2016 show ends here.]

["160327streamonatmmachine_1.mp3":]

The March 27, 2016 show – themes and things: “The Tiny Ten rule us by means of psychological mechanisms...” – does this statement surprise us?...” and... “making the coercion of 'class' conscious...” and... “exploring the connections between the crafted falseness 'politics'... the crafted falseness 'economics' (proposing our authentic definition of 'the economy'... which includes the “ATM Machine” ...) and our designed absence of empathy for each other (the crafted falseness 'child-rearing' ...)” and... “'hardening'... 'tempering'... our associations... through the recognition of our common collaboration with 'power' (under 'class'...) that 'coercion' is the common denominator of all 'class'-trauma... a trauma from which none are exempt...” and... “building capacity: the importance of our ethical stance in the face of 'power's sole obsession: 'to win' – utilitarian ethics (continued...)” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES” – also: an email sent informed that there have been interruptions of the Internet stream... and I fully expect there will be one when we discuss the “ATM Machine...” (Part 20... pages 129 –136)

["160327havelandsbywit_2.mp3":]

March 23, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: Because we are so sensitive... and have been cut off from our root – our own things (our connections and creations with our kindred spirits in being [living souls...] and antecedence [the ancestors...]) – the global-state-statesmen... 'power'... have been able to keep us small... control us... and defeat our associations... by means of psychological manipulation... by ensuring that we cannot trust what we see... what others say they believe – forcing each of us into an artificial psychic isolation... which... if unaddressed in our daily practice of wholistic self-defense... could ultimately defeat our necessary unification...

“The Tiny Ten rule us by means of psychological mechanisms...” – does this statement surprise us?... On the contrary... it sounds self-evident.

Yet this manipulation of us we never hear discussed in the echoing halls of public discourse... by the state-sanctioned pundits who speak for us... To hear honest... cogent... discussion of this critical issue on which we-the-people must get clear... we must go back four or five centuries – to Machiavelli... and Shakespeare – which we discussed... in the last chapter of *Waking Up*... “The Plan”:

...It is necessary...to be skilful in simulating and dissembling. But men are so simple, and governed so absolutely by their present needs, that he who wishes to deceive will never fail in finding willing dupes. ...It is not essential...that a Prince should have all the good qualities which I have enumerated [mercy, good faith, integrity, humanity, and religion], ...but it is most essential that he should *seem* to have them... (Niccolo Machiavelli, *The Prince*, written in 1513)

...men in general judge rather by the eye than by the hand, for every one can see but few can touch. Every one sees what you seem, but few know what you are, and these few dare not oppose themselves to the opinion of the many who have the

majesty of the State to back them up... Wherefore if a Prince succeeds in establishing and maintaining his authority, the means will always be judged honourable and be approved by every one. [...which is also what we heard from Hermann Goering from his jail cell... he said exactly the same thing – I mean... 'power' is 'power' is 'power'... we never hear that discussed by the official media either... – P.S.] For the vulgar are always taken by appearances and by results, and the world is made up of the vulgar... (Niccolo Machiavelli, *The Prince*, written in 1513)

A credulous father, and a brother noble, whose nature is so far from doing harms that he suspects none; on whose foolish honesty my practices ride easy! I see the business. Let me, if not by birth, have lands by wit: all with me's meet that I can fashion fit. ['Power' is 'power' is 'power'... – P.S.] (Shakespeare's *King Lear*, Act I, Scene II)

[“160327truestoryselfworld_3.mp3”:]

I wrote in *Waking Up* that... “we are, we wind from below, so good-hearted...” that... “we are like Edmund’s “credulous father” and “foolishly honest” brother...”

But this habit of manipulation that comes from Abandonment – the abandoned children of 'princes' – is a plague that only totally engulfed *us* in the aftermath of the French Revolution... when the abandoned children of 'power' made it a conscious strategy to re-make all psyches in concordance with their scheme to make 'the Republic' a reality...

...using the poisonous pedagogy of child-rearing...

So this is a new thing – this engulfment totally... through the machinations of hidden-'power' – and we owe Alice Miller... and Karl Popper... and John Boswell... and Martin Bernal et al... for our ability to see it... to 'out' hidden-'power'...

Now we stand... at a moment when we can get ourselves back at last... We have the ancestors' gifts to us... which need only to be synthesized and advanced... we have the Internet and instantaneous communication... so we can make the abuse of 'class' conscious... experience our suppressed feelings of rage at our abandonment... and the betrayal of all humanity... and make our priority the dissemination of our 'new' story... the truth... to our Brothers and Sisters...

But far from having synthesized and advanced our ancestors gifts...as a common endowment to us... our access to them is being made systematically and increasingly tenuous...

By suppressing true information... the underlying causation... what and who makes things happen... what events get recorded as 'events'... and who discriminates... who determines how 'stories' are recorded and interpreted and disseminated ('power' holds its cards close to the chest... is determined that we will *never* see them...) we form our judgments... and ourselves... essentially on crap: a brew of pap and poison with Fear and Hate mixing the proportions...

In the absence of our own things and the 'right story'... we continue to credit as legitimate the omnipresent falseness that surrounds us...

(...if nothing is real... we don't know what to feel (or think) – it stymies us... ensures we are easily manipulated... And so recovering our 'selves' is literally recovering 'reality'... as we exist only in relationship... are only as sound as the world that surrounds us... and until that world is of our own creation... we exist... merely... along for the ride... in a world skewed to favor the Few...

In a world falsely-constructed... our 'selves' can only be likewise...

...and when we accept – adapt to... modify ourselves to 'fit' to – the false world... due to a false allegiance to our parents... this allegiance is necessarily as well allegiance to 'the state'... *and* betrayal of the 'self'... as an authentic 'self' cannot be 'subjected'... allegiance to one's true self – once recovered... or never forfeited – opposes subjection entirely...)

...in the absence of our own things and the 'right story'... we continue to credit as legitimate the omnipresent falseness that surrounds us... because our lives are not our own...

Here then... is the place to begin: recovering them.

["160327mustnotweaponizeus_4.mp3":]

We must remember that most of us are grown-up abandoned children who never got to experience their grief at being abandoned – abandoned because of the coerced-work system... because of structurally-enforced atomization... and because of the utilitarian ethics that subjects us to 'the economy' and 'the state' (as manifested initially by our parents...)

That we are all (under 'class'...) reared such that our authentic self is – and authentic feelings are – suppressed... requiring of us years of trying to resurrect them... is an even more devastating secret weapon used against us than EMF. Hidden-'power' hides in us... to defeat our associations – which they fear... for obvious reasons...

(...hides in us most significantly when we hurt our children... which the 'power'-guys [the 'system...'] set us up to do... they want us to hurt our children... hurt our earth... sever our authentic connections... so we may continue the abusiveness... to their imagined benefit – it's just their illusion we've been living... and we must break out of it...)

We have been asking ourselves and Alice whether it's possible to reverse this process of suppression of our spontaneous feelings... begun in infancy... and is never-ending... until we end it... for while they do weaponize the energy of the environment... this must not include us... we must reclaim our own energy for ourselves... and to secure global freedom for all of us.

This process of suppression of our spontaneous feelings... as the key experience of 'class' – “'Authority' issuing commands...” we-the-people sitting on (suppressing) our honest resentment at this imposition – is reinforced through all of its social institutions...

...we have been asking ourselves whether we can reverse this process collectively... in our associations for global human freedom...

...asking ourselves whether our common experience of coercion... and our common reaction of rage to it – once spoken and discussed among us... re-bonds us all to our inherent longing for freedom... no matter how it had been suppressed in us... as infants...

Next week we will turn our thoughts more fully to this question.

—

["160327theatmmachine_5.mp3":]

When we say that finite resources *cannot* sustain this 'system'... it's important to the effectiveness of our practices that we help reinforce with each other an understanding of what 'the system' is... that by 'the system' we do not mean 'capitalism'... but 'class'... i.e. a 'system' in which the *Tiny Few continuously* reduce the amount of earth available to everyone 'not-them'... or 'not-needed' to sustain the illusion of a 'meritocracy'...

When a malevolency... or rather... 'unformed spirit'... sets his mind on rape... he either uses physical force... or psychological manipulation or other manipulation of conditions... or some combination thereof... to accomplish his object... which is transfer of all the victim's 'goods' to his pockets – i.e.... the victim must be conquered... her spirit broken...

We have been arguing that an authentic definition of 'the economy' is: “a mechanism or process for continuously reducing the amount of earth available to 'commoners'... while continuously consolidating the whole of the earth's resources (including 'the people' themselves...) into the hands of those who plan to establish themselves as planetary 'rulers' who can never be unseated by any group or groups of 'commoners'...” Doesn't what we have been calling 'capitalism' accomplish that? Is that not a 'wonderful' machine for accomplishing that? And it is the 'that' we should be focusing on... not the means for accomplishing it...

...and that reducing our numbers... and re-designing our human spirit... such that we are more 'manageable'... and more obedient to their commands... is... for them... key...

...and that their chief means for accomplishing this objective of 'population management'... is the 'ATM Machine'...

They literally create an 'ATM Machine' that is dual-functioning when they create disease and catastrophe: a machine that provides a continuous stream of funding for their malevolent practices... while simultaneously draining our resources and reducing our numbers (UC – Berkeley's announcement that it would like to reduce the resources available to its departments of Chemistry and Public Health... i.e... in essence... reduce the resources available for addressing widespread disease and analysis of the blood chemistry that could document the involvement of EMF effects in causing it... strikes me as not unrelated to this scheme...)

...and breeding-in the qualities they believe are 'optimum' in the humans they want in... their 'Republic'... as Plato advised them:

...Plato's reiterated insistence that good rulers, whether gods or demigods or guardians, are patriarchal shepherds of men, and that the true political art, the art of ruling, is a kind of herdsmanship, i.e. the art of managing and keeping down the human cattle. And it is in this light that we must consider his description of the breeding and training of "the auxiliaries who are subject to the rulers like sheep-dogs to the shepherds of the state."

The breeding and the education of the auxiliaries and thereby of the ruling class of Plato's best state, is like their carrying of arms, a class symbol and therefore a class prerogative. And breeding and education are not empty symbols but, like arms, instruments of class rule, and necessary for ensuring the stability of this rule. They are treated by Plato solely from this point of view, i.e. as powerful political weapons, as means which are useful for herding the human cattle, and for unifying the ruling class.

To this end, it is important that the master class should feel as one superior master race. "The race of the guardians must be kept pure," says Plato (in defence of infanticide), when developing the racist argument that we breed animals with great care while neglecting our own race, an argument which has been repeated ever since. (Karl Popper, *The Open Society and Its Enemies, Volume One: The Spell Of Plato*, p. 50 – 51; quoted in *Unpacking Democracy...* which you can download free from the Nascence to End Work website [in the 'Tools' section...])

["160327forceoftruth_6.mp3":]

...chief among these qualities bred would be obedience – an obedience needed... they believe... for the statesmen to 'govern' us... and install the future they want... the 'best state'... Plato's *Republic*... to achieve which 'the people' must be molded to fit 'their' functions precisely... which cannot be done... unless our spirits are broken... our wholeness stolen... 'happiness' defined as 'efficient service'... and an equivalence made between the 'self' and 'the state'... destroying our love... which is our most profound empathy for our authentic connections...

The 'power'-guys hope to design out of us that which enriches our thought – empathy – while telling us (and themselves...) that they represent "Thought's apotheosis": this is the central contradiction of 'class'.

The questions that face us in the present transition are matters of ethics... which means we need our feet beneath us... must operate with sound definitions... the right story... the truth...

When Proudhon says this:

Yet, nevertheless, sooner or later, the conversion [of the bonds] will be effected and property be violated, because no other course is possible; because property, regarded as a right, and not being a right, must of right perish; because the force of events, the laws of conscience, and physical and mathematical necessity must, in the end, destroy this illusion of our minds. (Proudhon, *What Is Property?*, Chapter II)

...he's speaking to our task of 'hardening' our associations...

Our intelligence has to have 'the right story' to make any headway with hidden-'power'...

[Our “Aspects of an effective model” (Pt. 5) will be discussed next week... to ensure that we have adequate time for Alice...]

[“160327breakpatternofsmallness_7.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

Unlived Anger (cont.)

[What is key in what Alice is helping us to see (speaking broadly...) is that... in the absence of our understanding (i.e.... conscious incorporation... with the use of 'the right story'...) of our early childhood experience of abuse... we legitimate... perpetuate the notion of 'the state'... i.e.... we *keep ourselves* 'small' – 'power' uses us against ourselves (its favorite thing to do...) compulsively repeating its trauma from childhood... in Alice's terms... or... in Bentham's... we are made to 'self-regulate'... or... in Marcuse's... we 'introject' 'the state.' But what is unique in Alice's explanation... is her guidance for how to get free of it – free of this pattern *designed* to continuously reproduce our 'smallness.'

She helps us understand *in what ways* we unconsciously manifest 'the state'... the abusive behavior we pass on to our children... helps us see where this behavior comes from: the omnipresence of 'coercion' in a 'class'-system... that our lives are not our own...

...and... beyond this... she helps us see that 'coercion' is the defining characteristic of 'class'-society... the common denominator of all 'class'-trauma... and... therefore... addressing it ('force') effectively in our practice will hopefully serve us as a 'group inoculation' against... the virus of 'class'... exorcising 'the state-in-us'...

...and... as a consequence... illuminate our global path to achieving our freedom in allowing us to embrace *all* of our Brothers and Sisters...

...illuminating the truth... therefore... that... as we said in our March 13, 2016 show... global empathy (spiritually and geographically...) frees us... Continuing with Alice: she has just asked... “Why is there still support for the corporal punishment of children? Her four-point reply (the final two we're reading again now...) could be viewed as “sightings of 'hidden-power'... places where... when viewed with the light of truth... 'power' is outed... – P.S.]

Three. Since tormenting one's children is a legitimate part of child-rearing, this provides the most obvious outlet for bottled-up aggression. [With 'the right story'... our anger at being forced is transformed into good energy from bad... good energy that sends us down fruitful paths... – P.S.]

Four. Because an aggressive response to emotional and physical abuse is forbidden by parents in almost all religions, this outlet is the only one available [...to we global commoners... the .0001% have other means... they have converted the entire planet into a vast field of possibilities for the releasing of their bottled-up hate... – P.S.].

...I don't know how people in other cultures who have not grown up, as we have, with the [Biblical] Fourth Commandment have solved this problem, but wherever I look, I see signs of the commandment to honor one's parents and nowhere of a commandment that calls for respect for the child [locating – as it should be... authentically – the root of the problem within the 'system' of 'class'... within thousands of years of ranking and submission to 'Authority'... within thousands of years of the practice of child abandonment and coerced-work... moves us past this question to the contemplation of the global nature of the problem... and necessarily as well to its solution... – P.S.].

...it would be a sign of great progress if this taboo [against allowing children to express their legitimate aggressive feelings toward their parents...] were done away with. If the mechanism becomes conscious, if people are allowed to become aware of what their parents did to them, they would surely try to direct their response to the preceding generation and not the following one. This would mean, for example, that Hitler would not have needed to kill millions of human beings if it had been possible for him as a child to rebel directly against his father's cruelty.

["160327rageatbeingmadeaninstrument_8.mp3":]

It would be an easy matter to misunderstand my claim that the untold deep humiliation and mistreatment Hitler suffered at his father's hands without being allowed to respond was responsible for his insatiable hatred. Someone may object by saying that an individual human being cannot destroy an entire people on such a scale, that the economic crisis and the humiliation suffered by the Weimar Republic contributed to producing the catastrophe. There can be no doubt that this is true, but it was not "crises" and "systems" that did the killing, it was human beings – human beings whose fathers were able to point with pride to the obedience instilled in their little ones at a very early age [and reinforced... if not first inculcated... by the coerced work system... – P.S.]

Every experienced analyst is familiar with ministers' children who were never allowed to have so-called bad thoughts and who managed not to have any, even at the cost of a severe neurosis. If infantile fantasies are finally allowed to come to the surface in analysis, they generally have a cruel and sadistic content. In these fantasies, the early fantasies of revenge of the child who has been tormented by his or her upbringing merge with the introjected cruelty of the parents, who have attempted to stifle or have actually stifled the child's vitality by making impossible moral demands.

Everyone must find his own form of aggressiveness in order to avoid letting himself be made into an obedient puppet manipulated by others. [It strikes me that this is the central content of the "wholistic self-defense" we are developing... – P.S.] Only if we do not allow ourselves to be reduced to the instrument of another person's will can we fulfill our personal needs and defend our legitimate rights. [We're going to be thinking more about the connection... or the relationship between... not allowing ourselves "to be reduced to the instrument of another person's will..." and having the right story... – P.S.] But this appropriate form of aggression is unattainable for many people who have grown up with the absurd belief that a person can have nothing but kind, good, and meek thoughts and at the same time be honest and authentic. [This also gets back to Proudhon's point: we have been fed false beliefs... once we have been able to discuss and get clear on the truth... would it then not mean the unseating of everything that has been suppressed?... – P.S.] The effort to fulfill this impossible demand can drive sensitive children to the brink of madness. No wonder they try to free themselves from their prison by means of sadistic fantasies. Yet this attempt is also forbidden and must be repressed. Thus, the comprehensible and empathic part of these fantasies remains fully concealed from consciousness, covered over by the gravestone of a dismaying, split-off cruelty. Although this gravestone is not totally invisible, it is carefully avoided and is feared for a lifetime. [And here is the deep soul-source of 'power's modus operandi... which is also its compulsion... to hide... – P.S.] Nevertheless, there is no other path to one's true self in the entire world than this one leading past the gravestone that has been shunned for such a long time. For before a person can develop an appropriate form of aggressiveness, he or she must discover and experience the old fantasies of revenge, which were repressed because they were forbidden. Only these fantasies can lead one back to genuine childhood indignation and rage, which can then give way to mourning and reconciliation.

["160327facingragefantasies_9.mp3":]

...[Writing... the ability to describe what he has seen in a creative way...] is one form of working through childhood hatred that is of immediate benefit to humankind – it doesn't have to be "socialized" first. Likewise, those who have benefited from analysis will not have the need to inflict harm on others once they have confronted their childhood "sadism." Quite the contrary, they become much less aggressive if they are able to live *with* their aggressions and not *in opposition* to them. This is not a case of sublimation but a normal process of maturation that can begin when certain obstacles have been removed. It does not require any great effort, because the warded-off hatred has been *experienced* and *not abreacted*. These people become more courageous than they were before: they no longer aim their hostility at those "below" them (e.g., their children), but directly at those "above" (who wounded them and thus caused their anger). They are no longer afraid of standing up to their superiors and are no longer compelled to humiliate their partners or their children. They have experienced themselves as victims and now do not have to split off their unconscious victimization and project it onto others. Yet there are still countless numbers of people who utilize the mechanism of projection... on children... on the mentally ill... on animals... What Professor White is doing with the brains of monkeys is acclaimed as science, and he himself is quite proud of his activities. Where is the line to be drawn between him and Dr. Mengele, who performed experiments on human beings in Auschwitz? Since Jews were considered nonhuman, his experiments were deemed "morally" legitimate. In order to understand how Mengele was able to remove the eyes and other organs of healthy people, we only have to know what was done to him in

childhood. I am convinced that something almost inconceivably horrible to outsiders would be uncovered, which he himself no doubt regarded as the best upbringing in the world, one to which, in his opinion, he “owed a great deal.”

The choice of available objects on which a person can take revenge for his or her childhood suffering is practically limitless, but one's own children provide an almost automatic outlet... Parents who were once tyrannized... experience their own tyrannical father in their child's anger, but here they finally have him at their mercy – like Professor White his monkeys.

[“160327regimenformakingsadists_10.mp3”:]

Analysts are often struck by the fact that their patients regard themselves as very demanding for having the most modest – but vitally important – of needs and by the fact that they hate themselves for this. A man who has bought a house for his wife and children, for example, may find he does not have a room he can retire to, although he ardently wishes for one. That would be too demanding or “bourgeois.” But because he feels smothered without this space of his own, he considers abandoning his family and escaping to the desert....

This example illustrates several of the ideas advanced in this chapter.

One. Even when the needs a child expresses are quite harmless and normal, she can be perceived by her parents as demanding, tyrannical, and threatening if the parents have suffered under a tyrannical father, for example, without being able to defend themselves against him [...or have suffered under tyrannical Plato's Tribesmen... imbued with a vision... in which case... as Alice herself pointed out... as a training regimen for creating sadists... people without empathy... who will obey orders absolutely – i.e.... for the purposes to which the Plato's Tribesmen devote 'their' children... these absurd constrictions placed on them are precisely the reason conditions for all life have so worsened... – P.S.]

[“160327mourningiskey_11.mp3”:]

Two. A child can respond to these “labels” with demanding behavior that comes from his or her *false self*, thereby embodying the aggressive father the parent is seeking.

Three. Reacting to the behavior of the child or later patient on the level of drives, or even trying to help him or her learn “drive renunciation,” would mean ignoring the true history of this tragic substitution and leaving the patient alone with it. [I want to think more about this in terms of the work we are doing together in our wholistic self-defense practice: we are *not* abandoning our Brothers and Sisters... we are not leaving them alone with the wrong story... with the false information that abandons them to being manipulated psychologically... and to the inevitable... and perhaps irretrievable... loss of their authentic selves... – P.S.]

Four. There is no need to attempt “drive renunciation” or “sublimation” of the “death wish” if the personal roots of an aggressive or even destructive way of acting are understood, for then psychic energy will of itself be transformed into creativity [*and... understanding of that personal 'virus' as being intentionally given to us... provides us with a bigger key... to our bigger cage... frees us of more lies... and so more fear – allows us access to even more of our suppressed creativity. We must understand 'power's manipulation of us – hidden 'power'... – as the key to unlocking the big cage. This is the 'waking up' process of reaching our full power through the recovery of that which has been intentionally suppressed... through the route of recovering truth... – P.S.], provided that no attempts have been made to “educate” the patient.*

Five. Mourning over what has happened, over the irreversibility of the past, is the prerequisite for this process.

Six. This mourning, when experienced in analysis with the aid of transference and countertransference [“the emotional reaction of the analyst to the subject's contribution...”], leads to an intrapsychic, structural transformation and not simply to new forms of interaction with present partners. This distinguishes psychoanalysis from other forms of therapy, especially family therapy.

[The March 27, 2016 show ends here.]

["160403faceourgreatness_1.mp3":]

The April 3, 2016 show – themes and things: “Facing our greatness – we are the wealth we've been waiting for: continuing our thinking through what an effective model of resistance must be – a wholistic 'Self-defense practice – that will form us into 'a people' that believes in our right to happiness'...” and... “making the coercion of 'class' conscious...” and... “exploring the connections between the crafted falseness 'politics'... the crafted falseness 'economics'... and our designed absence of empathy for each other (the crafted falseness 'child-rearing'...)” and... “'hardening'... 'tempering'... our associations... through the recognition of our common collaboration with 'power' (under 'class'...) that 'coercion' is the common denominator of all 'class'-trauma... a trauma from which none are exempt...” and... “building capacity to support our reconstituted wholeness (empathy... unity...): the importance of our ethical stance in the face of 'power's sole obsession: 'to win' – utilitarian ethics (continued...)” and... as always...: “how does what we do ensure that: “Love RULES”...” (Part 21... pages 137 – 143)

March 29, 2016... Sisters and Brothers: This moment exists for us to “face our greatness...” – our authentic-ness has been suppressed... our true lives misdirected... into serving the dreams of our fathers... while our own we dared not believe in...

It is this – our greatness – that 'power' hopes to suppress when it insists on manipulating us... constructing a 'reality'... a strict hierarchical 'ordering'... that allows it to do this... *ad infinitum* – a 'reality' that divides us... keeps us separate... forces us to live our lives in narrow compositions... rigid scripts... absent our understanding of what is happening... that would allow us to step out of them... and smash this artificial atomization...

'The economy' accomplishes 'power's objectives by ensuring that everything harbored by the earth and air is priced... and therefore ranked... a ranking determined by the money-measure... which provides the would-be-gods with means for keeping score between themselves... and for 'managing' (controlling) diverse populations... as we too are reduced to a score... and saddled with its accompanying baggage... enough to 'occupy' us... until 'power' shows us the door.

“Is not the global-'economy'... under the terms of 'capitalism'... a 'wonderful' mechanism for consolidating the resources of the planet into fewer and fewer hands?”... we asked last week... And so when will we have the discussion... that the 'world' is necessarily sculpted... as a 'world' grossly skewed in terms of control of the earth and the 'goods' it produces... exposes 'power's hidden hand... as only the Tiny Few have the means and motive to *make things happen*... to wield 'the economy' tool with aforethought... and so continuously turn 'the economy' to its own advantage...

When each new consciousness comes... it is to a 'world' intentionally sculpted... which then sculpts our consciousness to mirror the priorities it presents... and suppress our knowledge of the infinite... forcing us into a stultifying psychic isolation (reinforced by structural atomization...) 'psychic isolation' because each one of us feels alone with our early 'earth-knowledge' and our conditioned suspicion of it... Because of atomization we're not allowed to discover the powerful way in which we create new things when our minds and our hearts and our love begins to merge together... and that that is not something they can calculate or document 'scientifically': it is magic... it is mystery... And it's time for us to begin allowing that to live... in our hearts and in our relationships with each other – not to wait a lifetime to begin to trust what our bodies tell us... what the earth tells us... but rather... now that we have global communications begin doing this... all of us together... in the here-and-now... so that we can use that energy to go for what we deserve: our freedom... finally.

Because 'power' is global... we have to understand that nothing we hear over the official media is going to provide the solution to our dilemma... that it is only us... acting globally... that can free us... globally...

Once we come together... and compare notes... discuss this disaster... and figure out what is happening to us... this artificial construction collapses...

So this is 'power's method-in-chief... reiterating what we said last week: manipulating us psychologically... by systematically sowing its seeds of a paralyzing (in terms of our acting on our inherent longing...) psychic isolation... using the prioritization of its global-'economy' (teaching us to subject our gifts to it... and treat each other as competition... and / or view each other with suspicion...) which does the opposite of what we're told... this global-'economy' – it picks our pockets... destroys our peace... and creates material insecurity: manufacturing 'scarcity' in that which meets both our emotional and physical needs...

...because what it is is a machine for privatization... for removing all of the resources that we need in order to become self-sufficient... and placing those in private hands... What is that... if not 'manufacturing “scarcity”... and keeping us in slavery...

[“160403powersownpsychicisolation_2.mp3”:]

So this 'virus' of 'power' is simultaneously the 'virus' of psychic isolation: keeping us 'small'... keeping us separate... keeping us afraid – that's what it's all about... “Facing our greatness” means facing our fear that we are alone (our 'sources of power' – true power: the ancestors... the earth... and each other – *are* sources of power because they confirm our one-ness with the eternal... In *reality* it's not possible for us to be alone... but 'power' constructs this experience of 'alone-ness' and calls it “the human condition...”

[And we'll be pointing out again next week... as we do later in the show... how the innumerable 'philosophical explanations' we've been bombarded with... over the course of the 'class'-experience... evidences yet again... our debt to Alice... as she explains it: the need of the abandoned child to construct an 'explanation' that 'justifies' his experience of abandonment...]

When we can't overcome material and psychic isolation... when we cannot create “our own things...” we cannot be authentic (unbowed) beings... Rather... necessarily... as we are social beings... and need each other for confirmation of our existence... we are forced into 'state'-sanctioned social identities: to assuage psychic isolation we join state-sanctioned groups / identities... and... as Alice said... we necessarily tend to narcissistically-cathect them... falling in with 'power's' mindset of believing one's particular sect is 'better'... and in reproducing the divisions... we manifest 'the state'... perform per 'its' dictates... so it can feel safe...

When we can't overcome material and psychic isolation... when denied access to our Brothers and Sisters... we are denied access to ourselves... to soul-expansiveness... to our need to be 'big'... our inherent greatness...

When we can't overcome material and psychic isolation... it becomes generalized across and within regions... as we cannot help but to spread it unconsciously to our Brothers and Sisters... we cannot help but to manifest 'the state'... in the absence of an alternative that we ourselves create...

Then... wrenching free from the deadening global-'class' 'reality'... so authentic life can begin again... depends... on overcoming material and psychic isolation...

When we come together and begin to share information about the true 'forces' at work behind the 'appearances' of the 'class'-system – 'the right story' – we begin to grow true wealth as we grow ourselves – our inherent greatness – as our soul's growth depends on our having it: an accurate picture... the truth... And though we may find our inherent greatness alone... through communion with the earth... the ancestors...we cannot alone defend it... 'power' has organized itself precisely to suppress greatness that owes it no allegiance...

We need each other to do this. Can you see any other way to proceed but our coming together?... and together creating the alternative...

All three processes occur at once: overcoming the psychic isolation systematically fostered... gaining the right story that explains how it happened – and illuminates the path to our freedom: as we create our alternative based in opposite (to 'class'...) operating premises...

That its existence depends on preventing our doing this 'power' is well aware... and given the power of our longing to come together... given that it is our nature to do so: honor our passion... our love... our creativity... what our earth and what our body wants – 'power' is set on redesigning both our nature and the material conditions of our lives to attempt to ensure this never happens...

But this alternative begins despite 'power's' attempts at suppression – when... with our kindred... we come together in common possession of the 'right story'...

...this alternative begins when we gather with the shared assumption that we are overcoming atomization to build a future based in opposite [to 'class'...] operating premises...

...this alternative begins when we make shared space... designed with psychic and physical safety in mind... i.e.... with the full awareness that 'coercion' is the defining characteristic of 'class'-society... is the common denominator of all 'class'-trauma... and that this is a trauma from which none are exempt...

[“160403globalineverysense_3.mp3”:]

(“Part 2” of this “Facing Fear, Raise Up Love” series of discussions begins next week. It will include readings from P. J. Proudhon's *What Is Property?*... and I think it would help maintain the progression of our analysis to bring in Chapter V in advance of some of the earlier chapters: we'll be pausing in our Chapter I reading to consider his argument in Chapter V.)

*Aspects of an effective model of resistance – a wholistic 'self-defense practice: reincorporating our power through physical... intellectual... and spiritual integration and expansion... i.e. premised on and realizing a process of 'getting big'... in five components: One: Community education involving the key concepts for exorcizing 'the state-in-us'... and for understanding “the story of 'class'”... Two: Grounding our new understanding in our bodies by incorporating these key concepts in movement and voice (and that... I hope... will have as many expressions as there are creative groups working on it...) Three: Organizing for Global General Strikes ('global' in every sense of the word: 'all of us together' across those categories... the false divisions... of 'class'... and all of us geographically... Four: Land acquisition for building Earthships – most likely city-owned abandoned lots... that simply require the pressure of numbers to be turned over to community responsibility and caring – for Earthships... establishing a demonstration site... modeling what our future looks like in micro – and far from there being “too many of us...” we need everybody on board: there's a big mess that these 'power'-guys have made of our earth in these past two and a half centuries... and I suspect they intend to “put us to work” doing it on a compulsory basis: “work for food...” or “work for 'chits'...” or whatever it is they come up with to signify... quantify... our enslavement – that is *their* 'solution': 'winnow the population'... and put the rest 'to work' under terms *they* determine... when we're at a moment when the opposite of that *must* happen: we embrace the alternative that has been created by our ancestors – both indigenous / earth-connected [who don't need this work of getting their minds... their true selves... back...] and also the ancestors like Peter Kropotkin and Pierre Joseph Proudhon who have *literally* thought this through in so much rich detail that it's just there waiting for us... We have to believe in ourselves to put it into reality... Five: (here in the U.S.) organize a referendum to 'call the question' of our right to happiness (which is a tool... a wedge... that we must embrace here in order to take some of the bigger responsibility onto ourselves because we have more room to do so... politically speaking: they have to kill us clandestinely... our Brothers and Sisters in the 'Global South' don't have that little bit of 'wiggle-room'... of having official 'freedom of this' and 'freedom of that' – they can be killed openly – So let's use our 'greater freedom' to take the lead here... – Part 5: *learning to listen... giving each other the safety we need to grieve...**

[“160403reignofthefalse_4.mp3”:]

It is unlikely that strictly intellectual attempts to seek explanations and gain understanding during adulthood can be sufficient to undo early childhood conditioning. Someone who has learned at his or her peril to obey unwritten laws and renounce feelings at a tender age will obey the written laws all the more readily, lacking any inner resistance. But since no one can live entirely without feelings, such a person will join groups that sanction or even encourage the forbidden feelings, which he or she will finally be allowed to live out within a collective framework. (Alice Miller, “The Central Mechanism of “Poisonous Pedagogy”: Splitting Off and Projection”, *For Your Own Good*, p. 86)

This is an important quote to begin with as we formulate our practice because it's easy to neglect... all of our training in 'class' since we were infants runs against it...

In our practice we are undoing an enormous amount of damage done to us... through our experience living in a 'class' system...

So in recovering ourselves... we're recovering our balance: we're getting oriented to authentic reality... and so we need our feet beneath us – a solid... life-prioritizing... set of ethics... a sense of fairness... – we need our certainty... – to act... and for that we need the 'right story'... sound definitions... We need to know what happened... to us... and to our fathers – we need to know what we have been carrying on our backs unbeknownst... their unmet dreams... unmet dreams that have held us captive – all of us... under 'class'... regardless of our particular set of given circumstances...

The infection began with the domestication of non-human... and then human... animals... with the advent of what 'power' calls 'civilization'... but which is rather just its own never-ending 'seekingness'... a longing to be seen as a god-like thing...

A longing for divinity proclaims a proclivity for Dishonesty – so we are living in the time of the 'Reign of the False' – although Plato smoothed any niggling conscience that may have troubled the 'philosopher-kings' by terming this a 'Necessity': lying that was 'lordly'... avarice for a 'noble' purpose... they were taught... was avarice-not... lust not-lust-but-just... to realize the Perfection that 'the stupid ones' will only 'mess up'...

Once we see what we – all of us – have been doing when acting unconsciously... see that we've been seeking to *be* our father's unspoken dreams... Because we sense the distress... when we're born into it: the obsession to 'gain' "that which we have not..." at the cost of what we have: the 'all of it'...

The infatuation with interest as a key to the understanding of human action carried over into the eighteenth century when Helvetius, in spite of his exaltation of the passions, proclaimed: "As the physical world is ruled by the laws of movement so is the moral universe ruled by laws of interest." (Albert O. Hirschman, *The Passions and the Interests: Political Arguments for Capitalism before Its Triumph*, p. 43 – 44)

[You can hear in that quote the need of the child to 'explain' the father who abandoned him... just as Alice said... when we try to 'understand'... create the 'system'... the 'laws of the universe'... to 'explain' our parents' actions – and particularly our fathers... for complicated reasons... – we lose ourselves... we lose our authentic-ness...

How different with property! Worshipped by all, it is acknowledged by none: laws, morals, customs, public and private conscience, all plot its death and ruin. (P. – J. Proudhon, "Property as a natural right," *What Is Property*, p. 47))

Once we see what we – all of us – have been doing when acting unconsciously: attempting to realize our fathers' unspoken dreams – we can end the pattern of our being 'functionaries'... and then... once we see *why* our fathers' dreams could not be realized: the hidden schemes of 'power's to supplant that which is authentic...

...we can make our 'Spiral Awakening' – one truth leads to bigger ones – and then to our 'Renewal'... our 'Beginning Again'...

In our *conscious* actions we see our own destiny... our power... unfolding –

...what we were meant to be... becomes 'reality'...

—

[“160403mysteriousinterconnection_5.mp3”:]

It is a tremendous advance in the effectiveness of our organizing efforts to know that each and every one of us (under 'class'...) is an agent for 'power'... that each one of us transmits the virus to each other and to our children... because 'power' is hidden in our unconscious compulsions...

Our practice of wholistic self-defense is... in a sense... putting some flesh... and some political relevance... on the truism: “we are all one...” when we make the injury of 'class' conscious... by exposing our common experience of coercion to our conscious scrutiny...

...through the practice of learning to listen... of giving each other the safety we need... to grieve...

In our reading today Alice will tell us:

“Rage and pain can... pass quickly if one is free to express them....” [Suppression of authentic feelings – internalized force – is the defining quality of a totalitarian 'class'-system... and 'class' became totalitarian in the aftermath of the French Revolution... – P.S.]

“And the rage, if it is really acknowledged and experienced, can make room for a feeling of sorrow over the meaninglessness as well as the inevitability of the sacrifices.” [‘Inevitable’ given systemic 'class'... We will be... in sense...

experiencing this sublated rage at the trauma of 'class' for the first time together – 'Sublation'... is the word we learned from our Good Three that means: "to assimilate a smaller entity into a larger one..." – experiencing our sublated rage for the first time as we come together because we will only just then be fully digesting 'the right story' in our practice that defends our authentic selves... – P.S.].

(I've never written about my friend Bob because it's just too painful... I can't help but wonder if his death was an 'elimination'... due to our connection... as... since I've been targeted with EMF... every death in my life has become suspect... he was three years gone before I knew it... I assumed he only wanted to be with his family... and that wasn't me... so I accepted that we couldn't meet... and he stayed alive in me...

Point being: we met when I was a first-bracket apprentice... It was my second job and I was stuck in the shop and driving the truck... the shop manager received and filled all the orders for material... and I or we together delivered them... I recall standing behind the manager where he sat at his desk looking at an order in his hands in which most of the items on the list had an accompanying picture. The GF had illustrated his order. Seeing this filled me with such a complex mix of emotions... because by then the notion of 'waste'... how our lives are just thrown away... had already found a settled seat in me... "Who is that?" I asked. That was Bob...)

"The change from rage to sorrow makes it possible for the vicious circle of repetition to be broken." [The change from rage to sorrow makes it possible for us to exorcise the 'state-in-us'... – P.S.]

"It is easy for those who have never become aware of having been victims, since they grew up believing in the principles of being brave and self-controlled, to succumb to the danger of taking revenge on the next generation because they themselves have been unconsciously victimized. But if their anger is followed by grief over having been a victim, then they can also mourn the fact that their parents were victims too, and they will no longer have to persecute their children. The ability to grieve will bring them closer to their children." [When our anger at the use made of us – for millennia – is followed by grief at the monumental waste of our lives... once we fully take in its significance, then we can also mourn the fact that our parents... our Brothers and Sisters... and all our relations... are desperately... like we... in need of freedom... and far from taking our rage out on each other... our creative energy released... can be directed 'productively' into securing this needed freedom... globally... – P.S.]

As Alice Miller said... our coming together is not first and foremost about 'understanding' the story of 'class'... but rather about *experiencing* it together... because our bodies... the earth our bodies are... are our touchstones to truth... We 'know' 'what happened' once we experience our bodies consciously... and feel... realize... that they are not tools for use... objects for hire... but a sacred trust... a mysterious interconnection... a bond... a promise... a borrow of breath... a sacred pact with all life... to honor which we are given this capacity... and when not allowed to use it... to keep our promise... we are lost...

When 'power' forces us to lose ourselves... we lose our reason for being... become shadows searching for substance... looking for 'Authority' to explain our existence...

...we become fodder for Fascists... as Alice said... which is why they do it... force us to forfeit... our authentic-ness...

[“160403permissiontoknow_6.mp3”:]

Turning to Alice: Our Alice Miller Readings:

The Permission to Know

Parents are of course *not only* persecutors. But it is important to know that in many cases they play this role *as well*, and very often without being aware of it. In general, this is a little-known fact; when it is known, it is the subject of much controversy, even among analysts, and it is for this reason that I place so much emphasis on it here.

Loving parents in particular should want to find out what they are unconsciously doing to their children. If they simply avoid the subject and instead point to their parental love, then they are not really concerned about their children's well-being but rather are painstakingly trying to keep a clear conscience [...a key indicator of hidden-'power'... in one or another of its guises... particularly when done – this silencing – with the clear intent to force the internalization of these words of Goering's:

“It is not I who live, but the [state] who lives in me...” – P.S.] This effort, which they have been making ever since they were little, prevents them from letting their love for their children unfold freely and from learning something from this love. The attitudes of “poisonous pedagogy” are not restricted to outdated child-rearing manuals of the past. There they were expressed consciously and unabashedly, whereas today they are disseminated more quietly and more subtly; nevertheless, they still permeate most major areas of our lives. Their very omnipresence makes it difficult for us to recognize them. They are like a pernicious virus we have learned to live with since we were little. [The 'Mr. Smith' (from the film-series *The Matrix* trilogy...) is what I called it in *Waking Up*... along with 'the vampire'... an older metaphor... – P.S.]

We are often unaware, therefore, that we can live without this virus and would be better off and happier without it. People of high caliber and with the best of intentions, like, for example, A's father, can become infected without even realizing it. If they do not happen to undergo analysis, they have no occasion to discover the virus, no opportunity ever to question later in life emotionally charged convictions they adopted from their parents in early childhood. In spite of their sincere efforts to bring about a democratic family environment, they simply cannot help discriminating against the child and denying his or her rights, for, on the basis of their own early experiences, they can hardly imagine anything else. The early imprinting of these attitudes in the unconscious guarantees their enduring stability.

...People who were raised according to the principles of “poisonous pedagogy” suffer particular anguish at the thought that they may not have been perfect parents, because they owe it to their internalized parents to have made no mistakes. Thus, they will tend to shy away from new ideas and will seek a haven all the more behind the old rules of child raising. They will insist emphatically that duty, obedience, and suppression of feelings are the portals to a good and honorable life and that we become adults only by learning to keep a stiff upper lip; they will find it necessary to ward off all knowledge about the world of their early childhood experiences....

...Rage and pain can... pass quickly if one is free to express them.... And the rage, if it is really acknowledged and experienced, can make room for a feeling of sorrow over the meaninglessness as well as the inevitability of the sacrifices [although this... her use of the word 'inevitability' to refer to our incalculable losses suffered these last two and a half centuries... assumes the 'inevitability' of 'class'... which (thanks and praises to Karl Popper... Martin Bernal... Immanuel Wallerstein... et al....) I think we can now see... is a mistaken assumption... that... on the contrary... 'class' was a conscious creation by the just-forming Plato's Tribesmen... in the aftermath of the French Revolution... – P.S.]. The change from rage to sorrow makes it possible for the vicious circle of repetition to be broken. It is easy for those who have never become aware of having been victims, since they grew up believing in the principles of being brave and self-controlled, to succumb to the danger of taking revenge on the next generation because they themselves have been unconsciously victimized. But if their anger is followed by grief over having been a victim, then they can also mourn the fact that their parents were victims too, and they will no longer have to persecute their children. The ability to grieve will bring them closer to their children.

[“160403knowledgepermitted_7.mp3”:]

The same holds true for the relationship with grown children. I once talked with a young man who had just made his second suicide attempt. He said to me: “I have suffered from depressions since puberty; my life has no meaning. I thought my studies were to blame because they involved so much meaningless material. But now I have finished all my exams, and the emptiness is worse than ever. But these depressions don't have anything to do with my childhood; my mother tells me that I had a very happy and sheltered childhood.”

We saw each other again several years later. In the meantime, his mother had undergone analysis. There was an enormous difference between our two meetings. The young man had become creative not only in his profession but in his whole outlook; unquestionably, he was now living *his* life. In the course of our conversation he said: “When my mother loosened up with the help of analysis, it was as though the scales fell from her eyes, and she saw what he and my father had done to me as parents. At first it weighed on me the way she kept talking to me about it – apparently to unburden herself or to win my forgiveness – about how they had both in effect squelched me as a young child with their well-meaning methods of raising me. In the beginning I didn't want to hear about it, I avoided her and became angry with her. But gradually I noticed that what she was telling me was unfortunately entirely true. Something inside me had known it all along, but I was not allowed to know it. Now that my mother was showing the strength to face what had happened head-on, not to make excuses, not to deny or distort anything, because she felt that she, too, had once been a victim – now I was able to admit my knowledge of the past. It was a tremendous relief not to have to pretend any longer. And the amazing thing is that now, in spite of all her failings, which

we both know about, I feel much closer to my mother and find her much more likable, animated, approachable, and warm than I did before. And I am much more genuine and spontaneous with her. The insincere effort I had to make is over. She no longer has to prove to me that she loves me in order to hide her guilt feelings; I sense that she likes me and loves me. She also doesn't have to prescribe rules of behavior for me anymore but lets me be as I am because she can be that way herself and because she is herself less under the pressure of rules and regulations. A great burden has fallen from me. I enjoy life, and it all happened without my having to go through a lengthy analysis. But now I would no longer say that my suicide attempts were unrelated to my childhood. It's just that I wasn't permitted to see the connection, and that must have intensified my feeling of desperation.

This young man was describing a situation that plays a role in the development of many mental illnesses: the repression of awareness dating back to early childhood that can become manifest only in physical symptoms, in the repetition compulsion, or in psychotic breakdown. John Bowlby has written an article entitled "On Knowing What You Are Not Supposed to Know and Feeling What You Are Not Supposed to Feel," in which he reports on similar experiences.

["160403aquestionofpower_8.mp3":]

Afterword

After I finished the manuscript of this book and sent it to the publisher, I was talking about problems of child-rearing with a younger, very empathic colleague whose work I regard highly and who is himself the father of two children. He said it was a shame that psychoanalysis still has not worked out any guidelines for humane pedagogy. I expressed doubt that there could be such a thing as humane pedagogy, having learned in my analytic work to recognize even the more refined and subtle forms of manipulation that pass for pedagogy. Then I explained my firm conviction that all pedagogy is superfluous as long as children are provided with a dependable person in early childhood, can use this person (in D. W. Winnicott's terms), and need not fear losing him or her or being abandoned if they express their feelings. Children who are taken seriously, respected, and supported in this way can experience themselves and the world on their own terms and do not need adult coercion. My colleague was in complete agreement, but he thought it important for parents to be given more concrete advice. Then I quoted my sentence that appears on page 132: "If parents are also able to give their child the same respect and tolerance they had for their own parents, they will surely be providing him with the best possible foundation for his entire later life."

After giving a short, spontaneous laugh, my colleague looked at me very gravely and after a moment's silence said, "But that isn't possible..." "Why not?" I asked. "Because... because... our children do not use coercive measures against us, they don't threaten to leave us when we are bad. And even if they say it, we know they wouldn't do it..." He became increasingly reflective and then said very slowly, "You know, now I wonder if what is called pedagogy may not be simply a question of power, and if we shouldn't be speaking and writing much more about hidden power struggles instead of racking our brains about finding better methods of child-rearing." That's exactly what I have tried to do in the book I have just finished," I said. [A conversation first discussed in our December 27, 2015 show... We questioned then whether her reply was sufficient to the question... and in the months subsequent we've continued to ponder it... When Alice writes... in the "Preface to the American Edition" (first discussed in our May 17, 2015 show...) that:

I can imagine that someday we will regard our children not as creatures to manipulate or to change but rather as messengers from a world we once deeply knew, but which we have long since forgotten, who can reveal to us more about the true secrets of life, and also our own lives, than our parents were ever able to. We do not need to be told whether to be strict or permissive with our children. What we do need is to have respect for their needs, their feelings, and their individuality, as well as for our own.

...she straddles a more authentic reply to the point her colleague is suggesting in... essentially... illustrating her argument: that adults should be learning from... not attempting to teach... children... what it means to be a human being... and that the two of them are in fundamental agreement...

...and that the true problem is coercion itself... that our children model what is a healthy human being... that this health exists before those who benefit from sucking on our power get their fangs in us... and that an effective model of resistance to this global-system of 'power'... of 'class'... must... as Alice says... respect... and learn from... our children...
... and... beyond this... an effective model of resistance outs 'hidden power' by outing 'hidden' coercion...

This past year... we have been walking with Alice... taking in her deep insights... getting enriched by her observations... comforted by her calming manner and conversation... Let's ponder together for a bit... where next they take us... – P.S.]